

dranched book

Page Missing With In The Book Only Text Cut With In The Book

UNIVERSAL
LIBRARY

OU_150987

UNIVERSAL
LIBRARY

OUP—881—5-8-74—15,000.

OSMANIA UNIVERSITY LIBRARY

Call No. 109.0954 Accession No. 28426
S840
Author Srinivasa Iyengar
Title Outlines of Indian Philosophy
This book should be returned on or before the date last marked below.

Outlines



OF

Indian Philosophy.



BY

P. T. SRINIVASA IYENGAR.



THEOSOPHICAL PUBLISHING SOCIETY.

BENARES AND LONDON

THEOSOPHIST OFFICE ADYAR.

1908

PRINTED BY THAKUR DAS MANAGER.

LARA PRINTING WORKS, BENARÉS

CONTENTS.

CHAPTER I.

	Page.
There is a cycle of ideas common to all schools of philosophy in India	1
Philosophy in India means the regulation of life	3
All Hindu schools agree about the truth of 15 propositions	5
(1) Man is a complex of consciousness, mind and matter	8
Pure consciousness, Samvit	9
Analysis of a 'state' of mind by Prof. James...	11
Two meanings of the word 'consciousness' ac- cording to Stout	13
The Hindu idea of consciousness-Purusha ...	14
(2) The Âtmâ is of the nature of consciousness and immutable	15
(3) Mind is other than Âtmâ and is material	17
Material characteristics of mind ...	
Difficulty of realizing the materiality of mind	
(4) Psychic life obeys fixed laws ...	
The illusion of Free will ...	
(5) The sense-organs and action-organs made of subtle matter ...	
(6) The Liṅga-deha	
(7) Periodical incarnation	
(8) Laws of Matter—3 Guṇas	
(9) Pralaya and Kalpa	

	Page.
(10) The Subtle elements—tanmâtra ...	47
(11) All energy bound up with consciousness ...	53
(12) Prâṇa	58
(13) Karma	60
(14) Beginninglessness of Samsâra ...	63
(15) Moksha, the Goal of Life ...	65

CHAPTER II.

The individualistic <i>vs.</i> the monistic tendency ...	68
The same in the <i>Bhagavad Gita</i> ...	69
The fundamental question of Metaphysics ...	70

Section I. *Vedânta.* ✓

Param Brahma	73
The nature of the <i>Vedânta Sûtras</i> ...	75
The conception of Brahma according to the <i>Vedânta Sûtras</i>	77
Plotinus on the One	79
Spinoza on God	80

Individual Soul and the Supreme Brahma

Three different views of the Vedantic

Âng	82
<i>vs.</i> the Âchâryas	84
Vaîta	86
Vishtiadvaita	91
... ..	96

Section II. A. *Sânkhya.*

... ..	101
... ..	102

The Guṇas ...	...	...	105
The History of the Sāṅkhya	...	...	108

B. Yoga

Drashta and drisya	...	...	111
Īṣvara in Yoga	...	...	115

Section III. Āgama

The early vedic religion	...	...	118
The later vedic religion	...	...	120
The rise of Umā	...	...	121
The Trimūrti	...	...	123
Monotheistic movements	...	...	126
The Tantras	...	...	128
The influence of the Āgamas on Indian life and thought	...	...	130
The Āgamas, their nature	...	...	131
The three tattvas of the Āgamas	...	...	134
Bhakti	...	...	13
Chronological Notes	...	...	1'

i. Śākta.

Literature	...	...
The three Śākta tattvas	...	...
Prakāśa and Vimarṣa		

Three subdivisions

(1) *Pāṣupata*

Three ultimates	...	...	...	149
-----------------	-----	-----	-----	-----

(2) *Siddhānta*.

Three ultimates...	..	...	152
Mala	...	...	157
Mâyâ	...	...	159
Peṣu	...	...	161
The Lingāyatas	...	...	162
History of Śiva	...	...	164

(3) *Pratyabhijñā*.

History of the school	...	...	168
Spanda or Chaitanya	...	...	170
Śakti	...	...	172
Pratyabhijñā and Advaita	...	...	173

iii *Vaiṣṇava*.

the Vaiṣṇava Āgamas	...	...	174
Viṣṇu and his forms	...	...	176
Three categories—the position of Lakṣmī	...	...	180
History of Lakṣmī	...	...	184
Vaiṣṇav Advaita	...	...	185
	...	...	186
	...	...	190

on II. A.

and Nyāya.

Srīkara, 162, in referring to the Param Brahma of A., frequently called especially in later A., Nirguṇa Brahma.

Param Brahma: Supreme Being: used chiefly in Vedānta; in Rigveda, 72; in Bhag. Gita, 72, 244; in Upanishads, 74; in Vedānta Sūtras; 77, in (A.), 86; in (V.) 92-94; in (D.), 97-98; Cor. Prakāṣa (Śa.), Nârāyaṇa (Vai), Śiva (Ś.)

Pāṣa: fetter: (Ś) 155-6, vaguely corresponds to prakṛiti.

Paṣu: cattle: individual self (P.), 149, (Ś), 154-155; 161-162; Cor., Jivātmā (A., D.), chit (V., Vai.).

Paṭi: Lord: Supreme Lord (P), 149, (Ś), 153; Cor. Param Brahma (Vedānta), also, Îṣvara of various schools.

Prakāṣa: light: (1) light of consciousness (Ś.), 291, also generally used; (2) Sattva Guṇa (Y.), 112; (3) the Supreme, (Śa.) 141, 143, 144, Cor. Param Brahma.

Pradhāna: chief: Syn. of Mûlaprakṛiti (Ś.) q. v.

Prakṛiti: [?] how a thing is made: the 'object' (Ś.), 101; used by most schools also.

Puruṣa: orig. mean. unknown: male: the 'subject' (Ś.), 101; used by most schools also.

Sakala: with parts: (1) a class of individual souls (Ś.), 161; (2) the gross forms of Nârāyaṇa (Vai.), 177.

Sat: being: (1) differentiated consciousness, conscious

Section VI. *The Bhagavad Gītā.*

Page.

Probable origin	...	...	...	240
Supreme Reality	...	...	...	243
The Āchāryas thereon	...	...	...	245

CHAPTER III.

The fundamental question	...	...	251
--------------------------	-----	-----	-----

A *Ārambha Vāda.*

The theory of Coinherence	...	...	252
The later history of the theory	...	...	256
Udayana's arguments for the existence of an Īśvara	...	...	260

B. *Parindama Vāda.*

The theory of the existence of the effect in the cause	...	...	262
---	-----	-----	-----

1. *Sāṅkhya.*

The transmutation of matter	...	...	265
Buddhi	...	...	267
Ahaṅkāra	...	...	269
The eleven organs	...	...	270
Tanmātra	...	...	271
The manifested universe	...	...	273

2. *Yoga.*

evolution	...	...	275
	...	...	276

INDEX.

NOTE. This index refers to chap. II and III and deals only with technical terms that have different meanings or refer to things named differently in different schools. The nos. refer to pages.

The following contractions are used in this Index.

A. Advaita; V. Viṣiṣṭādvaita; D. Dvaita
S. Sāṅkhya; Y. Yoga; Va. Vaiṣeṣhika; N.
Nyāya; Ś. Śaiva Siddhānta; Pa. Pāsu-
pata; Pr. Pratyabhijñā; Śa. Śākta; Vai.
Vaiṣṇava; M. Mīmāṃsā.

Achit: unconscious, matter (V.), 93, cor. Mūlaprakṛiti (S.)

Adṛiṣṭa: unseen: unseen cause of actions (Va., N.), 258; karma (Ś.), 296.

Ahamkāra: I—maker: the consciousness of Self as opposed to not-self, (S), 269; [treated by later A. as a sub-division of antahkaraṇa, the inner organ; to be distinguished from Ahaṃtā, I—ness, the Śakti of the Āgamas, who is a goddess, the world-mother and not a tattva *merely*].

Alīṅga: without distinguishing marks or which cannot merge into another: primal matter (Y.), 112; cor. Mūlaprakṛiti (S.).

Anu: tiny, minute: atom, (1) eternal, ultimate sub-division of earth, air, fire and air (Va., N.); Mar

also is *Anu*, 203, 204, 208; conception of, 256; (2) Individual self, (S.), because he imagines himself to be infinitely small, 156, 294. cor. *Jivâtma* (A), *chit* (V.), etc.

A s a t : non—being: proto-matter, root of matter, that state of matter when it cannot be distinguished as matter, a vedic term, 72, 73, 282 *n.* treated in the upanishads sometimes as *Param Brahma*, 283; Cor. *Mûlaprakṛiti* (S).

Â t m â : original meaning unknown: (1) name of the substance, *Ego*, (Va, N.), 200, (2) a class of *tattvas* (Sa.) 289.

A v i d y â : ignorance; (1) ignorance of the non-duality of the *Jivâtma* and *Paramâtma* (A.), 87, 89; (2) consciousness of finiteness (Sa), 156.

A v y a k t a : indistinguishable, undivided, undifferentiated; 78; (1) identical with *Avidyâ*, which in the *manifested* world causes the sense of separation of the individual from the Supreme Self (A.), 89; (2) indistinguishable state of individual selves and matter when there is no *manifestation* (V.) 94.

B h ū t a : being; objects (of the world) (Y.) 114; also, elements, subtle (*Sūkshma*), 271, and gross (*Mahâ*), 273. (S.).

B u d d h i : knowledge; (1) the first stage of differentiated consciousness (S.), 267-269. (2) intellection (M.) 223, 236.

C h i t : Orig. mean. unknown: conscious, individual

self (V.) 93, (Pr.) 172. Cor. Jīvâtma (A.), Puruṣa (S.), etc. The derivative Chaitanya (Śa. 152-153, Pr.) 170; another derivative, chiti-Śakti, used in Y., 113.

Chitta: probably derived from chit, but refers not to the pure consciousness, but (1) to the inner organ (Y) 111, 113-114, 115; (2) memory (later A.), *ib*; (3) discriminative procedure of knowledge (P.), 150.

Dharma: What is established: (1) quality (Y.), 114, 276; (2) Vedic ritual (M.), 222.

Draśṭā: Seer: the 'subject' (Y.), 111; Cor. Puruṣa (S.), chit (V.), Âtmā (Va., N.)

Dṛṣi: Sight: cognition (Y.), 111, 112; Cor. Prakāśa, or chit-Śakti (S.), jñāna (S.), Chaitanyam (Pr.)

Dṛṣya: Seen: 'object' (Y.), 111, 112; Cor. prakṛiti (S.)

Gūṇa: strand: (1) three fundamental properties of the 'object' (S.), 105-107; (2) six special qualities of the Supreme. (Vai.), 181-182; (3) any quality of any object (Va., N.) 196.

Idam tā: this-ness: 'object' (Śa.), 141, 143, 144; Cor, Prakṛiti (S.), dṛṣya (Y).

Īśvara: ruler: (1) the omniscient being, author of creation, dependent on Avidyā, but different from it (A.), 87-89; (2) an ever-free Puruṣa (Y.), 115; (3) Paramâtmā, (Vai, esp. later), 186, 189; (4) Moral Governor of the universe (N.), 208; (5) God, the creator etc, (later N.), 261-262.

Jivâtma: self living (in the manifested world) : individual self (A.), 86 ; frequently contracted into *jîva*, especially in later A., and D. ; Cor. *chit* (V.), *apu* (S), *paṣu* (P., S), *puruṣa* (S.), *drashtā* (Y.), *Âtma* (Va. N.)

Kalā: small part: (1) insentient matter (P.) 149-150 ; (2) that which manifests *chaitanya* partially (Śa), 290.

Kāraṇāvasthā: causal condition: Param-Brahma during *pralaya* (V.) 94 ; Cor. Param *Âtma* (A.).

Kāryāvasthā: Effected condition: Param-Brahma during *Kalpa* (V.), 94 ; Cor. *Îṣvara* (A.).

Kriyā: action, usual sense everywhere : *Rajas* (Y.), 112.

Kṣhetrajña: knower of the field : Individual soul (Vai., Bhag. *Gitā*), 184 ; Cor. *Jivâtma* (A.), *chit* (V.), etc.

Mâyā: power of causing illusion : (1) a power of *Îṣvara* (A.), 88 ; same as *Avidyā* (A.), 89 ; (2) treated as an entity (later A.), *ib* ; (3) the womb of the world (Śa), 158 ; of two kinds (Śa.) 158—161.

Mûlaprakṛiti: root-matter: Nomuenon of material objects (S), 103-5 in some respects like Param Brahma also *asat* of the Vedanta, ether of science. *ib* ; Cor: *Alinga* (Y.), *idaṃtā* (Śa), *achit* (V.), *avidyā* (A.), *avyakta* (A.),

Nirviṣeṣa Brahma: Brahma free from specific attributes : word used by Râmānuja, 92, and

Srikara, 162, in referring to the **Param Brahma** of **A.**, frequently called especially in later **A.**, **Nirguṇa Brahma**.

Param Brahma: **Supreme Being**: used chiefly in **Vedānta**; in **Rigveda**, 72; in **Bhag. Gita**, 72, 244; in **Upanishads**, 74; in **Vedānta Sūtras**; 77, in (**A.**), 86; in (**V.**) 92-94; in (**D.**), 97-98; **Cor. Prakāṣa** (**Śa.**), **Nārāyaṇa** (**Vai**), **Śiva** (**Ś.**)

Pāṣa: **fetter**: (**Ś**) 155-6, vaguely corresponds to **prakṛiti**.

Paṣu: **cattle**: **individual self** (**P.**), 149, (**Ś**), 154-155; 161-162; **Cor.**, **Jivātma** (**A.**, **D.**), **chit** (**V.**, **Vai.**).

Patī: **Lord**: **Supreme Lord** (**P.**), 149, (**Ś**), 153; **Cor. Param Brahma** (**Vedānta**), also, **Īṣvara** of various schools.

Prakāṣa: **light**: (1) **light of consciousness** (**Ś.**), 291, also generally used; (2) **Sattva Guṇa** (**Y.**), 112; (3) **the Supreme**, (**Śa.**) 141, 143, 144, **Cor. Param Brahma**.

Pradhāna: **chief**: **Syn. of Mūlaprakṛiti** (**Ś.**) q. v.

Prakṛiti: [**?**] **how a thing is made**: **the 'object'** (**Ś.**), 101; used by most schools also.

Puruṣa: **orig. mean. unknown**: **male**: **the 'subject'** (**Ś.**), 101; used by most schools also.

Sakala: **with parts**: (1) **a class of individual souls** (**Ś.**), 161; (2) **the gross forms of Nārāyaṇa** (**Vai.**), 177.

Sat: **being**: (1) **differentiated consciousness, conscious**

being (Vedânta), 72, 74, 81, etc ; (2) the Supreme (V.), 92.

Śîlâ : Syn. of Guṇa (Y.), 112.

Sthiti : rest : (1) name of Tamas (Y.), 112 (2) maintenance of the world (Vai.) 183.

Spanda : Vibration · Name of the Supreme (Pr.), 170 : Cor. Param Brahma, etc.

Vidyâ : knowledge : (1) cognition of the identity of the individual and supreme self (A.), 87 ; (2) method of meditation (upanishads), 120 ; (3) Sentiency (P.), 149 ; (4) a class of tattvas (Śa.), 292 ; (5) the 30th tattva (Śa.), 291.

Vikriti : Alteration : (1) effect (S.), 103 ; (2) Paramâtamâ (Vai.), 178.

Viśeṣha : difference : (1) species (Va.), 197 ; (2) elements that produce bodies (S), 273.

PREFACE.

I have, in the following pages, attempted to separate the varied threads of the tangled skein of modern Hindu philosophical thought and religious beliefs. Each school of ancient thought was based on a special point of view of its own and was promulgated for the purpose of emphasizing the particular standpoint which appealed to the persons that founded and elaborated that school. But "as the water that rains from the sky goes all to the ocean" and once mixed with the ocean, the contributory streams become indistinguishable from one another, so modern Hinduism has received the tribute of the Upanishads, the Sâṅkhya-yoga, the Vaiṣeṣika-n'yâya and the triple Âgamas, and its wonderful tolerance has intricately mixed up all these

elements. I have endeavoured to separate all these elements and exhibit separately the teachings of these ancient systems.

In doing so, I have attempted to discuss the ideas of the earliest available exposition of each school. In India, thinkers, however independent they may be, whatever new vistas of thought they may open up, are compelled by inexorable orthodoxy to father their opinions on the ancients. The boldest thinker this country has produced, Śaṅkara, felt it necessary to seek the sanction of orthodoxy by deriving his new ideas from the old *Brahma Sūtras* and the older *Upanishads*. Being a philosopher, he had to pretend to be a scholiast. Obversely, each commentator on an older philosophical work, while professing to expound his author, imports some of his own ideas in the comment and thus unconsciously helps on the movement of thought. Thus, to take an illustration from modern schools, when the canon may be expected to be definitely fixed, Suresvara, the premier disciple of Śaṅkara, slightly alters the *Advaita* of his master. The author of *Bhāmati*, Vāch-

aspati Miśra, gives it another twist; after him, Vidyāraṇya gives another; and so thought goes on ever changing, though not always for the better. So, too, the Viśiṣṭādvaita; of Yāmuna, Rāmānuja, Pillai (Lokāchārya), Vedānta Deśika and Maṇavāla, each has introduced some alteration in the scheme of thought. Similarly, the early Vaiśeṣika Sūtras ignore a creator or a distributor of rewards and punishments: but the modern Tarka school it wedded to a thorough going theism. Hence in discussing the opinions of each school I have relied on the earliest available book and not on the commentaries thereon.* In the case of the Brāhma Sūtras, I have made an attempt (the first, I believe, by any one) to indicate what I imagine to be the author's position distin-

* How much even European scholars have succumbed to the influence of the commentator is proved by the fact that Max Müller, in translating certain passages of the upanishads has put into the text matter found only in Śaṅkara Bhāṣya; Deussen's recent exposition of the philosophy of the Upanishads is vitiated by his identification of the position of the Rishis with that of Śaṅkara. Is it any wonder that the average Hindu, to whom the seer and the scholiast are both prophets sees revelation in both text and commentaries!

guishable from that of the 'three' schools of interpretation, called the "three creeds" (trimata) which have engulfed it.

Though the Hindu venerates the V e d a as self-revealed and takes great pride in calling himself a V e d â n t î and has recently proposed to himself to carry the light of V e d â n t a to the West, yet the living religion of India, what one may call the 'working faith' of the Hindus of today, is based on the Â g a m a s, Ś a i v a, Ś â k t a, or V a i s h n a v a; less than a thousand years ago, the Â g a m a s were looked on as unauthoritative and Yâmunâ, in founding the modern V a i s h n a v a V i ṣ i s h ṭ â d v a i t a school felt it necessary to write the *Āgamapramāṇya*, the authoritativeness of the Â g a m a s. To-day, however freely scraps of the U p a n i s h a d s are quoted in discussions, the actual opinions and religious practices of the Hindus are taken entirely from the Â g a m a s. For this and other reasons, the Â g a m a s have been kept secret. I have attempted to give an account of them and their fundamental ideas, quoting from unpublished or untranslated works. I hope that this will

direct the attention of scholars to a vast virgin soil of investigation likely to yield valuable results. *

In discussing the various schools my aim has been to combine the sympathetic insight which is possible only to one born and bred within the Hindu religious fold and the critical and impartial judgment of one who has shaken himself free from the shackles of sectarian animosity and partizan enthusiasm. Whether and how far I have succeeded it is for the reader to judge. The only other works that can be compared with this one in scope are the *Sarva Darsana Saṅgraha* of Mādhavāchārya and the *Sarva Vedānta Siddhantasāra*, attributed to Śaṅkarāchārya, but a late work. The former though written with a degree of impartiality very creditable in a Hindu of five centuries ago, has for its aim not the exposition of the fundamental tenets of the many Indian systems of thought, so much as the glorification of the *A dvaita*

* Prof. Garbe alone of European scholars has realized the value of the *Āgamas*, but he does not seem to have done much for their elucidation.

as superior to the rest. Moreover Mâdha-
 va uses each school only to demolish the
 previous one and his exposition of every
 darṣana (system) is limited by this
 circumstance, those only of the fundamental
 ideas being referred to which help him in his
 object. His account of the Âgama schools
 is very meagre; in fact he does not mention
 the Śākta Âgamas at all; possibly because
 he himself, being the reputed founder of the
 Sringeri mutt, was a Śākta as so many
 Advaitis are and regarded its mysteries
 too sacred to be desecrated by being revealed
 to the public. Of the second work, I could
 get only a part. It is now being edited by
 Professor Rangâchârya of the Madras
 Presidency College. Its treatment of Mî-
 mamsa is good. The rest does not seem
 to be valuable.

In dealing with Sanskrit technical terms,
 I have preferred not to employ English
 substitutes especially in the 2nd and 3rd
 chapters. If Indian philosophy is at all to be
 understood by English-speaking peoples, they
 must learn to associate with Sanskrit terms
 their special connotations. No Sanskrit

philosophical term can be equated to any English word. The word 'manas', for instance is usually translated 'mind', but the connotations of the two words are by no means identical. 'Manas' to a Hindu is a material, objective thing: it is not the brain, for the brain is 'gross', whereas 'manas' is subtle matter. But even a crass Western materialist who regards mind as a secretion of the brain will not admit mind to be matter in any sense of the word; he may deny its separate existence as an entity, but to him it is subjective and not objective. Hence the translation of manas as mind cannot but raise obstructive associations in the mind of the reader. The word 'Buddhi', again, is absolutely untranslatable. Ahamkāra is self-consciousness, the basis of the cognitions, 'I am the doer of this', but Ahamkāra to the Hindu, is a function of matter, the object, and not that of Self, the subject. Another fruitful source of confusion caused by translating technical words is due to the fact that different schools of thought use the same word in different senses: thus, 'viveka' to the

A d v a i t î is the distinction between the subject and the object ; to the **V i ṣ i ṣ h t â - d v a i t î**, it is the choice of the proper food that leads to spiritual enlightenment. The word ' m ū r t a ' in the **U p a n i ṣ h a d s** means that which has form and in the **V a i ṣ e ṣ h i k a** it means that which moves. Obversely different words have been used for the same idea in different schools and this has contributed to the accentuation of their differences. It has therefore been thought that the synopsis given at the end of the book of such terms would be more useful than an index mechanically constructed. Yet no new Sanskrit technical term has been introduced in the text without some sort of explanatory word (suiting the context, but not pretending to be a translation) being added, for the use of readers who may not care for the subtle shades of difference but may like to acquaint themselves with the general trend of thought of the various systems discussed. One English philosophical word alone, I have taken the liberty to use freely, viz., 'consciousness' This word I have used not in its usual connotation, in psychological works, of

OUTLINES OF HINDU PHILOSOPHY.

CHAPTER I.

CYCLE OF IDEAS COMMON TO ALL PHILOSOPHICAL SCHOOLS OF INDIA.

AS it was in ancient Greece and Rome so it is in modern Europe and America ; various schools of Philosophy are being propounded, each challenging every fundamental principle of the rest. Not so in India, where though the different Darśanas disagree about important questions, the ideas common to all these systems are so many and so vital that these deserve to be formulated by themselves under the name of Hindu Philosophy.

These ideas are as a rule assumed and not definitely expounded in the literature of the different schools ; each school being naturally anxious to explain and justify by argument, the special points of doctrine and discipline which constitute its individuality, and differentiate it from its sister philosophies. These philosophical schools are commonly enumerated as six, called the *Ṣaḍ*

Darśanas. Two of them are wholly based on the Vedic texts and are called the two *Mīmāṃsā*s;* they are *Pûrva* and *Uttara* (Earlier and Latter), otherwise, *Karma Mīmāṃsā* and *Brahma Mīmāṃsā*, investigation of *Dharma* and of *Brahma*. The other four are based on reasoning and while paying homage to the supreme authority of the *Veda* do not derive their substance from Vedic texts, viz: *Sāṅkhya*, *Yoga*, *Nyāya*, and *Vaiśeṣhika*, the disciplines of Enumeration, Effort, Reasoning and Definition respectively. *Mādhava*, in his *Sarva-darśana-saṅgraha* however, classifies the schools of his time as sixteen, viz, *Chārvāka*, *Bauddha*, *Ārhata*, *Rāma-nuja*, *Pûrṇaprajña*, *Nakulīṣa-pāṣu-pata*, *Śaiva*, *Pratyabhijñā*, *Raseṣvara*, *Vaiśeṣhika*, *Akshapāda*, *Jai-minīya*, *Paṇiniya*, *Sāṅkhya*, *Pātañ-jala* and *Śāṅkara*.† He professes to explain the specific teachings of each school, but one gets lost in this forest of philosophical systems and forgets that in them there is very

* *Rāmānuja* defines *mīmāṃsā* to be "a discussion of sentences of the *Veda* for the purpose of specially determining the nature and modes of (the things referred to in the *Veda*)."

† *Mādhava*'s chapter on *Śāṅkara darśana*, so long believed by all scholars to be identical with the book called *Pañchadaśī* has been discovered in the Tanjore Library by *Govinda Dāsa* of Benares and incorporated in the recently published *Anandāśrama* edition of the *Sarvadarśanasamgraha*.

much more community of opinion than diversity, which alone Mâdhava emphasises. We shall discuss in this chapter these fundamental assumptions of Hindu thought, so as to prepare the way for the consideration of the different teachings of the various schools with regard to individual problems and to methods of philosophical training.

Philosophy to all modern western thinkers, is chiefly a matter of speculation; to them its interest is mainly intellectual, in that it solves problems that have troubled the mind; but to the Hindu as to the ancient Greek and Roman, philosophy has besides this theoretical, a practical interest, the regulation of life. "In ancient times," says Dr. Bussel, "The pursuit of wisdom was practical and implied adherence to a definite rule of life" (*Personal Idealism*, P. 342); and so it is in India even to-day. Philosophy has never been in India dissociated from life; hence each school sets about its investigations with the specific aim of discovering the means of man's attainment of a state of perfection called Moksha. This is the *raison d'être* of each school. Unless it embodies a definite method of intellectual, ethical and spiritual training, leading a man up to perfection, it has according to Hindu ideas no justification for existence.

The only modern European philosopher that recognises this to be the function of philosophy is

the semi-oriental Spinoza. The opening sentence of his *De Intellectus Emendatione* (Transl. Elwes), says, "After experience had taught me that all the usual surroundings of social life are vain and futile; seeing that none of the objects of my fears contained in themselves anything either good or bad, except in so far as the mind is affected by them, I finally resolved to enquire whether there might be some real good having power to communicate itself, which would affect the mind singly, to the exclusion of all else; whether, in fact, there might be anything of which the discovery and attainment would enable me to enjoy continuous, supreme, and unending happiness."

As to Spinoza, so to all Hindus, philosophy begins with V a i r â g y a, estimation of pleasures and pains at their proper value, and ends with M o k s h a. The first impulse to philosophy is not intellectual but emotional and moral. " 'What hast thou to do with riches? What hast thou to do with kin? how shall wives bestand thee, son! that shalt surely die? seek the Âtman, that which lieth hidden in the cave. Where are gone thy father, and the fathers of thy father?' Such was the teaching, still more ancient, addressed by an ancient Indian father to an ancient Indian son—addressed by Vyâsa to his son Shuka—Shuka who grew to be greater even than his great father. And such used to be the origin of philosophy in olden India."

(Bhagavān Dās, *Science of the Emotions*, p. 9.)

And such ought to continue to be always the power that inspires philosophy if it is to be something more than arid logomachy, laboured pounding of husk, fruitless and only too often leading to hypocrisy, to pharisaic self-righteousness, to pompous protestations and poor performance. The world has a moral value and philosophy ought to serve a nobler purpose than merely securing to its devotee the feeling of intellectual satisfaction in the acquisition of an idea by the path of speculation.

Philosophy, therefore, to a Hindu means not merely a body of opinions to be believed, but a life to be lived, a training to be undergone for attaining a state of release from bondage.* It is therefore unfair to these schools to judge of them as western writers invariably do, as theories to be argued about, apart from the practical training that they prescribe.

All these disciplines, except the school of crude philosophical Nihilism as expounded in the *Sarva-darśanasāṅgraha* under the name Chārvāka and attributed to Bṛihaspati, are agreed about the truth of the following propositions regarding the

* Even the Pūrvā Mīmāṃsā, though this is not commonly recognized, proposes to lead to a state that can be properly called Moksha for, as Nachiketas says,—“Those who live in the Heaven-world reach immortality.” *Kaṭh upniṣad*, i. 13. vide Yami's reply, *Ib.* i. 17-18.

constitution of the cosmos, the nature of man, and the goal of human evolution.

- (1) Man is a complex of consciousness, mind and body.
- (2) The **Ātmā** is of the nature of consciousness and is immutable.
- (3) Mind (**a n t a ḥ - k a r a ṇ a**), though an inner organ is material and is other than the **Ātmā**.
- (4) Psychic life obeys fixed laws and hence all mental events are determinable.
- (5) The five sense-organs (**j ṇ ā n e n d r i y a s**) and the five action-organs (**k a r m e n d r i y a s**) are, like the mind, made of subtle matter.
- (6) The eleven organs inhere in a **l i ṅ g a d e h a** or subtle body, which is relatively permanent.
- (7) The **l i ṅ g a d e h a** is periodically connected with a body of flesh and blood, which provides man with sense-organs and action-organs of gross matter.
- (8) Matter (**p r a k ṛ i t i**) is mutable but increate and obeys fixed laws.
- (9) The world history is made up of alternating periods of activity (**k a l p a**) and rest (**p r a l a y a**).

- (10) The subtle elements that make up all objects are five, corresponding to the five senses.
- (11) All energy in the universe is personal, *i. e.* bound up with consciousness of varying degrees of intensity.
- (12) This energy is *prâṇa*, which is intermediate between spirit and matter.
- (13) The law of causation—*karma*—is supreme in the physical and mental worlds.
- (14) *Samsâra*, the course of karma, is *anâdi*, had no beginning.
- (15) *Moksha* is the goal of human life and results from the training of the mind, and hence reaching the state of *moksha* is a definite mental event.

It is curious that these fundamental doctrines upon which all schools of Hindu philosophy are absolutely agreed, deal with questions about which western philosophers have been hopelessly divided from the time of Aristotle to modern days. It is also worthy of note that in this long list of propositions about which all these schools are agreed, there is no reference to God or to His relations with the cosmos. For while the *Vedânta* is a school of Pantheism, all the rest are, as expounded by their founders, what the European thinker would regard as atheistic ; while all of them

recognize the existence of the many powers of Nature, they exclude the conception of one Universal Being. The earlier Sāṅkhya, Vaiśeṣika and Mīmāṃsā works are frankly atheistic. The Yōga and the Nyāya Sūtras refer to a Deity, but the former makes him but an ancient teacher, and the latter but an adjuster of rewards and punishments and no more. The later expounders of all these systems have given a theistic twist to them, because in later days, the Vedānta became popular and hence the name Nirīṣvara, atheistic, became a term of reproach.

We shall now discuss the fifteen propositions which are common to all these schools.

(I) *Man is a complex of consciousness, mind and body.*

In western philosophy the concepts 'consciousness' and 'mind' are not mutually exclusive. They are sometimes used synonymously ; as when 'states of consciousness' and 'states of the mind' are used as the names of the successive phases of the flux of the inner life ; at other times 'consciousness' is treated as a quality or adjunct of mental life ; but in Eastern philosophy these two concepts indicate two things absolutely distinct from each other ; consciousness is Sāmvit the enlightener of the mind and the senses and their operations ; whereas mind, antaḥ-karāṇa, is jada, unconscious. In other words, mind is matter

and consciousness is spirit. *Sa m v i t*, pure consciousness, is what manifests to the man himself the operations of his mind and of his senses. To borrow an analogy from the senses, the eyes see the world when opened and directed towards objects. Similarly when *Sa m v i t*, consciousness, is turned on mental processes, the spirit *sees* or *knows* the functioning of his mind. It is as if a ray of light proceeded from the spirit and enlightened the processes of perception, reasoning, etc. These mental functions exist whether consciousness accompanies them or not, just as the world exists whether beings see it or not. Sight manifests them to the individual ; so the light of consciousness manifests the functions of perception, reasoning and conation to the man. Consciousness is not thought, for the latter is a procession of images, and the former the manifestation of them to the man himself. Even Hindu writers sometimes confound the two, for the word *j ñ â n a* is used for thought as well as for consciousness; nor is the word *ch a i t a n y a* devoid of ambiguity, because the idea of motion (which is a function of material objects) is associated with it.

‘Pure consciousness’ has to be distinguished from ‘personal consciousness.’ This latter is investigated by Prof. James in chap. xii of his *Text-book of Psychology*. He subdivides it into two parts (1) the self as known, the ‘Empirical Ego’, or the *me* and (2) the self as the knower, the

'Pure Ego', or the I. The former he subdivides into (1) the 'material me,' the body, etc, (2) the 'social me,' the recognition one gets from his mates, and (3) the 'spiritual me', the entire collection of one's states of consciousness; the 'pure Ego' he defines as the Thinker, the Agent behind the passing 'states of consciousness,' whose existence psychology has nothing to do with. This is the best commentary on the proposition that man is a complex. But elaborate as this classification is, it does not distinguish between 'pure consciousness' that is unchanging light and 'personal consciousness' which is mind as illuminated by the spirit, between *chit-ṣakti*, and *chitta-vṛtti* as the Yogî terms them. 'Personal consciousness' is *Aham*, an ideal construction from experience, just as the world is an ideal construction and belongs to the conceptual plane. 'Pure consciousness' is *Âtmâ*, a fact underlying all that is given by experience. The pure consciousness of the *Puruṣha* is that of which the personal consciousness bound up with mental or bodily activities, with which alone we are normally acquainted, is a reflection in matter. When we move the muscles of the body we are conscious of pleasure and pain, of perception, conation, or judgment and we are conscious of ourselves as separate from the objects outside us. These are states of personal consciousness, each state being a complex. From it let us eliminate whatever is

contributed by the body and by the mind. What remains is the consciousness that accompanies all mental processes, first differentiated by Plotinus among western philosophers and called the accompaniment—*para kolonthesis*—of the mental activities by the soul. This is the light of consciousness which manifests both the mental and the physical worlds. It is the power of pure intelligence—*chit-sakti*—which being unchangeable, cannot become the seat of perception, for this latter belongs to the mind. We have thus reached a vague idea of pure consciousness as separate from mental activity, by abstraction from the personal consciousness. Pure consciousness however, is not an abstraction but a reality, the greatest reality attainable by man. The realization of this life of the *Ātma* is the aim of all schools of Indian philosophy.

What is called the inner life of man is termed 'the stream of consciousness' in western philosophy. Prof. James notes the following four characteristics in the flowing 'states of mind':—

(1) Every 'state' or thought is part of a personal consciousness.

(2) Within each personal consciousness states are always changing.

(3) Each personal consciousness is sensibly continuous.

(4) It is interested in some part of its object

to the exclusion of others, and welcomes or rejects—chooses from among them. (*Text-book of Psychology*, chap. xi.) In this description, the conceptions of 'state', and of 'change' belong to matter; those of 'continuity' and 'choice' belong to the Puruṣha and personal consciousness is due to the union of the two. Matter presents itself as a series of changing states, and spirit, whose light is continuous, chooses a few of them and illuminates or manifests them to himself by *seeing* them. Only we must regard all states of the mind—all cognitions, desires and actions as states of matter that is always in a flux, and not as belonging to the spirit, whose life is continuous and unbroken. Prof. James explains that the third of the above four propositions "means two things: (a) That even where there is a time-gap the consciousness after it feels as if it belonged together with the consciousness before it, as another part of the same self; (b) That the changes from one moment to another in the quality of the consciousness are never absolutely abrupt." (*Ib.*) This continuity is explicable only if consciousness is regarded as separate from mental states, and the relation between the two to be similar to that between a light and a procession of objects illuminated by the light. There is no change in the 'quality' of consciousness, but to strain the analogy a little, the *object*, in this case a state of mind, goes to the outermost fringe of the field of illumination and

hence looks dim and no more.

G. F. Stout (*Manual of Psychology*, p. 8) notes two uses of the word consciousness:— (1) To indicate all mental states whether we have cognizance of them or not (2) the awareness we have of ourselves and of our own experiences, as states of the Self—an inner sense—the function by which we perceive the mind and its processes, as sight perceives material facts. Father Maher distinguishes three meanings generally attached to this word. (1) To indicate the sum total of our psychical existence, all cognitive, emotional and appetitive states which are capable of being apprehended. (2) The mind's direct, intuitive, or immediate knowledge either of its own operations or of something other than itself acting upon it; in other words, the energy of the cognitive act, and not the emotional or volitional acts as cognized. (3) The reflex operation by which the mind attends to its states and recognizes them as its own. (*Psychology*, pp. 26–27.) The second meaning of consciousness, according to Stout and Maher approximates to some extent to the Hindu idea of it. Perception, Emotion and Conation are functions of the mind that take place according to mental laws, whether they are, or are not, illuminated by the light of the spirit and manifested to it. In ordinary psychic experience this consciousness of the spirit is inextricably and compulsorily bound

up with the life of the mind ; and can be understood only when it can be separated from the mind and contemplated apart from its mental colouring. This pure consciousness being the immaterial part of man is called P u r u s h a—Man, *par excellence*. It is also called J ñ a, the knower, for he knows or becomes conscious of the functions of the mind, the senses, and the muscles and of himself as the Ātmâ. Purusha is S v a y a m - p r a k â s h a, manifesting his own being. He knows himself to be, unlike the mind and the body whose existence is manifested only when cognized by some conscious being. Hence consciousness is frequently compared in Hindu books to light. The light of the sun reveals itself to us directly and when it beats against any object it manifests the existence of that object also. So the P u r u s h a reveals his existence to himself and also illuminates a mind or a body he is in contact with, which otherwise would be unconscious, unknown, unmanifested to him. European Idealism makes the existence of matter depend on its being made manifest by the mind. It holds that whether there be a noumenon behind what we cognize as matter or no, it is certain that sensations exist and that as sensations are mental modifications, no objective existence can be manifested in the absence of mind. Constructive Idealism represented by John Stuart Mill admits a permanent possibility of sensation behind the phenomena of the objective world ; but the thorough-

going Idealism of Berkeley does not. Indian thought is a much more profound Idealism than these ; mind and matter are both objective to the Purusha ; they are revealed by him, without whose illumination they are Asat, non-being, for Sadbhava, manifestation of being, can never exist without the illumination of the Purusha. But to himself Purusha is always illuminated ; consciousness is an ultimate factor of human experience and cannot be proved or need not be manifested by anything else. Descartes argued, " I think, therefore I am ; " Hindu Philosophers argue, " I am, therefore I am."

2. The Ātmā is of the nature of consciousness and is immutable.

The part of Man that we have called consciousness is variously named Purusha, Ātmā, Bhoktā, etc, and its characteristics variously described. Thus the Purusha of the Sāṅkhya School is pure consciousness, devoid of any quality. The Ātmā of the Vaiśeṣikas is characterised by desire, effort and so on. But in all Schools the essential nature of the Ātmā is Svayam-prakāśatva, the power of illuminating or manifesting the mental and bodily functions which, but for the Ātmā, would go on unconscious and unknown. Itself is immutable, a steady light that knows not change. The immutability and hence the immortality of this

immaterial part of man is involved in its very conception. | *Âtmâ* is *vi b h u*, not limited by space ; matter is a *ṇ u*, atomic. It is, in the words of Plotinus, " All in all and all in every part." Hence the *Âtmâ* is neither divisible nor indivisible, neither a compound nor an atom, not susceptible of diminution nor of excess. It is futile to attempt to conceive the origination or destruction of consciousness, for consciousness is involved in that very conception. Creation and destruction are understandable if conceived as the beginning or the ending of one of a series of forms in which any noumenon manifests itself in relation to an observer ; consciousness being from its very nature immutable can hence neither begin nor end. " The *Âtmâ* is *Jñā*, eternal consciousness, because it is ncreate. Eternal consciousness is the nature of the *Âtmâ*, just as heat and light are of fire." (*Śaṅkara Bhāṣya* on *Ved. Sūtt. II. iii. 18.*) Moreover, *Âtmâ* is by definition the opposite of *Anâtmâ*, matter. The essential nature of matter is its mutability, its capability to evolve into a procession of phenomenal forms ; whereas *Âtmâ* is unchanging. Therefore the beginning or the ending of consciousness is excluded from the very definition of *Âtmâ*. He may shift his place of illumination from body to body.; or rather, a series of bodies may be periodically brought near him and shine by his reflected light, but he is *nitya*, eternal. Some Bauddha

schools alone, of Indian systems, reject the notion of the continuity of the life of the man's *Âtmâ*, but Buddhism and Jainism are excluded from this brief survey of Indian thought, only the so-called orthodox schools being included, those that at least nominally admit the *prâmânya*, authority, of the Veda and do not openly denounce it as the followers of the Buddha and the Jina do.

(3) Mind, though an inner organ is material and is other than the *Âtmâ*.

The mind of man is an organ made of subtle matter and is not immaterial or spiritual but *prākri-ta*, made of matter. Sensation, perception, volition, etc., are in western philosophy called subjective states and treated as non-material. Hindu philosophy analyses them into two factors, viz: (1) a mental process internal but *not* subjective, and (2) consciousness accompanying the process and reflected from the *Âtmâ*. The first is material and the second immaterial. Mental processes are variously classified in the various schools, the *Sânkhya* attributing to the mind all psychic life, and the *Vaiṣe-shika* regarding it merely as the organ of attention, but all schools are agreed in regarding mind as matter. This apparent paradox of schools of philosophy, essentially idealistic, but holding to the view called materialism in the west, namely the view that mind is matter, has proved a stumbling-block to every western scholar. In western philosophy, the

clear-cut concept 'consciousness' as we have formulated it above has not been attained ; nor are definite marks attached to the concept 'matter.' Descartes made extension the only characteristic of matter. This "confusion of matter with space", as Clark-Maxwell called it, even Spinoza, the expounder of Descartes, rebelled against. In ordinary thought the so-called properties of matter are made to hang loosely from that concept, and the phrase 'states of consciousness' is held to imply elementary facts incapable of further analysis. When consciousness is eliminated from the facts of psychic life and when it is realized that mental functions are by themselves, *jaḍa*, unconscious, it ought not to be difficult to understand what the Hindu philosopher means when he says that *antaḥkaraṇa* is a form of matter. *Antaḥkaraṇa* literally means, the inner organ as opposed to the outer organs of sensation and action. The *jñā*, the spirit, uses it as an organ, and therefore it must be other than he, 'since there is a knower and an organ of knowledge.' (*Nyāya Sūtra III. I. 17.*) This mind is objective to the spirit. He sees it quite as much outside him as he sees his body and the world outside him, whereas the knower cannot place himself outside like a perceived object. Objectivity to the conscious Purusha is the chief mark of matter ; matter and mind possess this characteristic. Another idea involved in the concept 'matter' is its mutability

its ever-present flux, its capability of evolving in a series of ever-changing phenomena. Antaḥ-karaṇa evolves in ever-changing phenomenal forms (called chittavritti by the Yoga school) like the waves and ripples and eddies on the surface of a lake, unlike the steady light of the Purusha which waxes not nor wanes.

These phenomenal manifestations of matter in a never ending kaleidoscopic flux of forms are subject to time and space; and mental events are both temporal and spatial. They succeed one another in time and are restricted in space to the brain which subserves them. Purusha is neither big nor small; he has no before and after. These spatio-temporal relations of the manifestations of mind are subject to the law of causation. They are prakṛiti-vikṛiti, related as cause and effect. But consciousness is a steady light and where there is no change, there can be nothing subject to the relation of cause and effect. Hence if, as modern Psychology admits, mental states are governed by the law of causation, mind is matter, not spirit.

Atomicity—indivisibility and invisibility—is a mark of certain forms of matter according to the Vaiśeṣhika philosophers and mind is aṇu, atomic. Âtmâ is vibhu, pervasive, everywhere and nowhere. Consciousness cannot be conceived as being restricted to any part of the body through which it manifests itself; but the mental processes

of cognition, desire, etc., are certainly not "all in all and all in every part," but clearly localized.

Traiguṇya—being possessed of the three Guṇas or fundamental properties,¹ resistance, ² motion and equilibrium—is the chief characteristic of matter according to the Sāṅkhyas. Whatever resists force, can be moved by it and reaches equilibrium under the action of many forces—that is matter according to this school. Antaḥkaraṇa displays all these characteristics, inertia, excitability and finally equilibrium. But consciousness by itself is not amenable to the influence of external objects. It cannot be quenched ; nor can it be increased by their influence. Hence it is a category quite distinct from mind.

It is difficult to realize mind to be matter, because of the fact that it derives a pseudo-subjectivity on account of its being an inner organ. When our muscles act, our consciousness accompanies the action ; but we can in thought separate the consciousness from the muscular action and realize the latter as a phenomenon of matter that is the non-ego, and all the more easily because in the case of other human beings than ourselves we observe these muscular actions without observing the consciousness that accompanies them. But mental action each man can study only in the operations of his own mind, and as these are accompanied by the light of his own consciousness, the separation of

these two and the appreciation of the difference of the nature of consciousness and of mental action becomes a matter of difficulty.

Plato and Aristotle use such phrases as the "seeing of sight", "the perceiving of perception," the "thinking of thought" to indicate consciousness apart from mental functioning. *Kena Upanishat* uses strikingly similar phrases "what speech does not enlighten, but what enlightens speech," "what one does not think with the mind, but by whom they say the mind is thought", "what one sees not by the eye, but by whom seeing is seen", "what one does not hear by the ear, but by whom hearing is heard," "what none breathes with breath, but by whom breath is breathed, this is Brahma, not what people here worship." (I. 4-8.) Plotinus, among ancient philosophers first clearly formulated this distinction. "Intelligence is one thing and the apprehension of intelligence is another. And we always perceive intellectually, but we do not always apprehend that we do so." (*Enn. IV. 3. 30*, Trans. Taylor.) This is the first clear indication in European philosophy of the existence of unconscious mental action, and of the idea that our so-called inner life is a complex of two different factors—consciousness and unconscious mental modifications. The idea that consciousness is not a necessary concomitant of mental operations was first clearly enunciated

in modern European philosophy by Leibniz. "As a matter of fact our soul has the power of representing to itself any form of nature whenever the occasion comes for thinking about it, and I think that this activity of our soul is, so far as it expresses some nature, form or essence, properly the idea of the thing. This is in us and is always in us, *whether we are thinking of it or no.*" (*Metaphysics*, Tr. by Montgomery, P.64.)

"Perception should be carefully distinguished from apperception or consciousness. In this matter the Cartesians have fallen into a serious error, in that they treat as non-existent those perceptions of which we are not conscious." (*Ib* : p. 253.) Sir William Hamilton brought into prominence the conception of unconscious mental modifications. Dr. Schofield, in the opening chapter of his *Unconscious Therapeutics*, attributes the phenomena of hysteria to the power of unconscious mind, and justly complains that the powers of unconscious mind have been unduly neglected by investigators. But it has not struck western thinkers that mind is in itself always unconscious as muscle is always unconscious. Ribot, in *The Diseases of Personality*, uses the fact that the life of the mind is sometimes unconscious, to prove that consciousness is "a simple phenomenon, superadded to the activity of the brain, as an event having its own conditions of existence appearing and disappearing according

to circumstances." (*Ib* : p. 4.) Binet says, consciousness is "capable of disappearing without the corresponding nerve process being altered. Two similar images succeed each other in the mind. It matters little whether we did or did not notice the resemblance, for being similar, they will put a common cell element in vibration. This identity of seat will be sufficient to produce all the results which are produced by a resemblance which is recognised and judged by a conscious comparison." (*Psychology of Reasoning* p. 126.) "The formation of general ideas must take place without the intervention of the cell, in the same manner as suggestion by similarity and for the same reasons, by the sole virtue of the images raised ; or in more accurate terms by the effect of the identity of the seat of the particular impression. Images have the property of organizing themselves into general images as they have the property of suggesting similar images." (*Ib*: p. 27) This is true so far as it goes, but it does not go far enough. *All* psychic life is in itself unconscious, except in so far as the light of consciousness illuminates it and manifests it to the knower. Consciousness is unique ; it exists for itself and of itself. Psychic life runs its own course, following its own laws, which are the same as the general laws of matter ; this course is not affected by the light of Purusha that is sometimes shed on it thus bringing it with-

in his field of vision. Psychic and physiological conditions are invariably bound together, both being material functions; consciousness is not a phenomenon or epi-phenomenon of material processes as it exists in its own right, neither beginning nor ending, never increasing, never diminishing. Not so the complex fact, which we have called personal consciousness, made up of the reflection of pure consciousness and of mental functions. All mental functions are in themselves unconscious; when the Purusha turns to them he illuminates them and makes them manifest; otherwise they would remain as unmanifest as the physical world would be in the absence of sentient beings. Mind is a material fact just as a muscle is a material fact. The action of the mind or the muscle may be or may not be accompanied by consciousness. In investigating the action of the mind or the muscle, consciousness has to be eliminated as an alien factor, and mind should be realized to be always unconscious in its own own nature, as muscle is. Western philosophy not thus distinguishing the nature of consciousness to be characteristically different from that of mind has raised an insoluble problem—"what is the relation of conscious mind and unconscious matter? Is it one of interaction, or of parallelism?" Either hypothesis is unthinkable. It is neither possible nor philosophically helpful to imagine that consciousness and modifications

of matter, categories so characteristically apart from each other, can interact or run parallel to each other. Immutability and mutability cannot meet. Mind is matter and mental processes are material modifications. Consciousness may illuminate them, manifest them, or know them, but except this there can be no other relations between them and consciousness. Whether the mind be taken as identical with the nervous system, as western materialists do, or it be constituted of subtle matter as eastern philosophers hold, it is absolutely different from the Purusha that illuminates it; though he may out of ignorance identify himself with it, he is not really identical with it. The disciplines prescribed by the founders of the Darśanas are but means of training a man to realize the nature of the *Ātmā* to be different from that of mind. The bondage from which all the Darśanas except the Pūrva Mīmāṃsa propose to relieve the *Ātmā* is that due to *adhyāsa*, false identification of himself with mind, the consequent pain due to ignorance, and *moksha* is the actual realization of the difference of these two. Till this difference between the *Ātmā* and mind is grasped it is impossible to understand the philosophy of the East.

4 *Psychic Life obeys fixed laws and hence all mental events are determinable.*

As the *antaḥkaraṇa* is a material organ, its modifications must take place under fixed laws.

All matter obeys the law of causation. Hence every mental event is the resultant of previous events, so that if the causes were known, the effects could be calculated and predicted exactly as in any other sphere of matter. As all schools of Hindu philosophy thus regard mind as a form of matter, the problem of the freedom of the will was never raised in India. The 'will' is a metaphysical entity, that is one of which we cannot form a picture, which, in European philosophy, is supposed to be a factor of the mind and to introduce into phenomena, mental or bodily, a new force which can upset all known causes of those phenomena. Hindu philosophy analyses mental events into cognitions, desires and actions interconnected by causal relations, but does not postulate a will among them. The threefold life of the mind goes on under the triple law of Sattva, Rajas and Tamas, but neither the mind itself nor anything extraneous to it can constrain the mind. There is no other *vera causa* of its movements than Sattva, Rajas and Tamas, which are but the conditions of its modifications. Hence the so-called freedom of the will is a myth. That cannot be called free which obeys fixed laws and the course of whose modifications can be calculated beforehand. The mind is no more free than the apple which falls when it is released from the tree which gave it birth. Hence all Indian philosophy is deterministic. It regards

all mental action as reflex ; a current of energy (called Prāṇa, the analogue of nervous energy in subtle matter) from without, entering the mind and returning as an action. In the mind, deliberation may intervene between the in-going and out-going currents. During the deliberation, motives floating in the mind or buried deep within it may rise and influence the direction of the return current, but all is calculable, all is determinable. No mental function is "free" in the sense that the well known laws of matter are transcended by them.

The mind is not free, but the Âtmâ may attain freedom from his bondage to mind. Consciousness is involved in most mental and bodily processes. We are generally conscious of our thoughts and motions. In the case of some of them, we can deliberately withdraw our consciousness from them. We can turn our consciousness away from a passing thought or a casual bodily activity ; but an intricate train of thought or a complicated co-ordination of muscular contractions perforce drags the consciousness into it. This compulsory involution of the consciousness in mental or bodily life is bondage ; the ability to withdraw the consciousness from mental or bodily events, however exciting, or again, the ability to stick to a thought which is being hustled out of the field of consciousness by other thoughts is the freedom which man is to gradually acquire by self-training. Thus

freedom is the goal of human evolution ; but this is not freedom of the will, but the liberation of consciousness from being compulsorily mixed up with bodily and mental events. The Mukta, he who has reached perfection, is said to be " free. " It is not freedom of the will that he develops, but the freedom from the compulsory interlocking of his conscious self with his mind and his body. He may turn away from matter and thus escape its tyranny, but if he uses a mind, he can do so only by recognizing its laws and by utilizing them by judicious obedience to them just as man uses the forces of the physical world by understanding them and obeying them. In this sense, the greatest God, nay Işvara Himself, is said to be not above the Law of Karma.

The two profoundest thinkers of modern Europe Spinoza and Leibniz had no illusions on the question of free will. " In the mind there is no absolute or free will ; but the mind is determined to wish this or that by a cause, which has also been determined by another cause, and this last by another cause and so on to infinity ". (Spinoza, *Ethics*, 18, 48, Transl : Elwes.) " All our thoughts and perceptions are but the consequence, contingent it is true, of our precedent thoughts and perceptions, in such a way that were I able to consider directly all that happens or appears to me at the present time, I should be able to see all that will

happen to me or that will ever appear to me".
[Leibniz, *Metaphysics*, Transl: Montgomery. p. 25.)

The theory of free-will has been re-started in recent western Philosophy by the argument that it is a datum of consciousness. In the interest of this theory Munsterberg has propounded an illogical antithesis between "truth of life" (Free Will) and truth of science (Determinism). The function of Science is to group the facts of life under ideal schemes, and hence there cannot be any antithesis between the two. The new Oxford School of Hmanism, led by Dr F. C. S. Schiller, holds the view that determinism is a postulate, a methodological assumption in the sphere of science, the truth of which is strictly relative to its explanatory function. Similarly freedom is a postulate in the moral sphere with as good a right to exist if it can be used with like profit. But common sense rebels against the adoption of two opposing postulates to explain the same phenomena. The real cause of the difficulty is this:—determinism is a fact of the mental world and freedom, possible or actual, belongs to the sphere of *Ātmā*. Western philosophy treats the mind enlightened by the consciousness of the *Ātmā* as one single category, whereas a so-called state of consciousness, *i. e.* a psychical event, is a complex of two factors—one unique, at present in bondage but with the possibility of acquiring freedom, and the other, working

under fixed laws. With regard to this mixed category, called personal consciousness, disputes have raged. Some looking at one side of the question have maintained it is free and others have protested against the idea. Hindu philosophy escaped being caught in the vortex of this dispute, because it started with a clear analysis of a psychic state into its constituent elements (1) consciousness and (2) a flux of psychic phenomena and saw, from its inception that freedom as a datum of consciousness, and determinism of the psychic series as a scientific conception are not incompatible, because they refer to different categories. In popular religious thought, the question is still further confused by the importation into it of alien problems. The problem of evil supposed to be introduced into the world by a personal devil and the idea of the moral responsibility of man for the proper use of powers he was supposed to be gifted with by a personal God have confounded the real philosophical question at issue. The irrepressible anthropomorphism which ruled early human cultures and inspired the ideals of so many world-scriptures erected God into an autocratic Ruler who gave life and human faculties to man and ordered him to use them according to certain ordinances on pain of punishment for violation. But science has abolished this God made in man's image and this divine law

which was but a glorified copy of human laws.

Others maintain that effort depends on free will. Effort is roughly proportional to stimulus, and belongs as much to matter, as force does ; for what depends on stimulus from without cannot in any sense be spiritual or free.

A few again fight shy of a frank acceptance of determinism from a fear that it will render impossible man's guiding his self-improvement. This fear is groundless. The supersession of the capricious Gods of nature of the early days by the recognition of natural law in the material Universe has in no wise tended to strangle human efforts to utilize nature for human purposes. So, too, will the recognition of natural law in the mental and moral world not prevent human efforts in mental growth ; but on the contrary, it would make self-training intelligent and effective and prove it necessary. Ignorance of the laws of the mental world and a blind faith in its being outside the law of causation can never help effort. On the contrary a knowledge of the conditions of mental life, of what is possible and what is impossible in mental training, and of the means whereby we might co-operate with nature in the evolution of our minds is the best possible help to individual effort for self-improvement.

5 The five sense-organs and the five action-organs are, like the mind, made of subtle matter.

5. Subject to the mind are the five Jñānendryas (organs of knowledge) and the five Karmendryas (organs of action). These also are made of subtle matter. The nervous system is the physiological counterpart of these eleven subtle organs, one "internal" and ten "external." They are all made of Sūkshma bhûta, the five kinds of subtle elementary matter to be discussed later on. The organs of knowledge are those of audition, touch, vision, taste and smell. The organs of action are those of speaking, handling, walking, excretion and procreation. These ten organs are conceived as being primarily modifications of invisible subtle matter, which evolve into those of the visible physical body. Their ten functions are controlled by ten different subtle lines of force and they are subordinate elements of psychical life, while the functions of the mind are its principal elements. Like the mental functions they enter the field of consciousness only when the light of Âtmâ falls upon them. At first sight it looks like a violation of the law of Parsimony that the senses are conceived as existing both in the physical and super-physical matter. But if it is true, as all Hindu Yogis assert, that the sense functions are exercised by a man separated from the physical body during life or after death, the subtle organs ought to exist separate from the gross ones. The division of muscular functions (Karmendriyas) into five class-

es is against the modern physiological idea that motor impulses of all kinds are one and the same; but so long as physiology has not yet been able to make up its mind as to what a nervous impulse is, it cannot object to the Hindu idea of there being five different kinds of motor impulses in the subtle body.

(6) *The Eleven organs inhere in a L i n g a - d e h a which is relatively permanent.*

The mind of man and the other ten organs inhere in a body of subtle matter called L i n g a - d e h a (characteristic body) also called a y o n i j a (nonuterine body) and * subdivided variously into several subtle bodies by the different schools. It is the companion of the Â t m â during his long wanderings (S a m s â r a) in a k a l p a (world period). It is b h û t â ſ r a y a, composed of elementary subtle substances. It is also K a r m â ſ r a y a, the store-house of s a m s k â r a s, potential deposits of man's thoughts, desires and actions. It is the vehicle of his p r â ñ a s, nervous energies of various kinds. The union of P u r u ſ h a with the L i n g a d e h a, during the long period

* Different Schools mention different subtle bodies, intermediate between the permanent lingadeha and the perishable sthûladeha i.e. chhâyâ. Yâtanâdeha, etc, perishable bodies that the man is provided with during his post-mortem peregrinations; but here we are concerned only with the general principles underlying all Hindu Schools and not the special teachings of any particular School.

of his manifested life (K al p a) is for the purpose of enabling him to experience pleasure and pain (b h o g a) and finally reach a p a v a r g a (emancipation). Pleasure and pain are not primary attributes of physical or psychic life. The action of the outside world on man through the sense organs produces a reaction in the shape of a motor impulse. This motor impulse is a flow of p r â ṇ a towards muscles. This flow if uninterrupted is called pleasure and if interrupted is called pain. Both in normal and morbid conditions pleasure and pain are frequently confounded and people find pleasure in pain and v i c e v e r s a; thus proving that the flow or interruption of p r â ṇ a is the primary fact and pleasure and pain but an interpretation thereof. This is all in harmony with the Hindu ideas; but this flow or interruption of energy takes place in the L i ṅ g a d e h a, whose special function is B h o k t ṛ i t v a, capability of subserving sensibility.

The Neo-platonists believed in the existence of a L i ṅ g a d e h a. Plotinus speaks of "a separable portion of the soul," a "common, dual, or composite nature which is the subject in perception," and which is an intermediary between soul and body. (Whitaker's *Neo-platonists*, pp. 46-49.) This doctrine dropped out of European philosophy in the darkness of the middle ages. On account of the severance of the Greek philosophic tradition during this period

of the obscuration of European intellectual life it is impossible to find out what the ancients really meant by the terms *psyche* and *mens*, nor can we trace the exact correspondence between Greek and Hindu philosophy; only it is certain that the modern English translations of Greek terms are as inadequate as those of Samskr̥it terms and there was more unity of thought between the ancient Greek and the ancient Indian than the English translations of Greek and Samskr̥it works indicate.

7. *The Līṅga-deha is periodically connected with a body of flesh.*

This is the *Sthūla-deha*, the "gross body" by means of which man acts on nature outside him. The addition of this *Sthūladeha* completes the man. The personal consciousness as already pointed out is the result of the conjunction of the *Samvit* of *Purusha*, the *Bhoktr̥itva* (sensibility) of the *Līṅga-deha* and the *Kart̥r̥itva* (capacity for action) of the body of flesh and blood. While in this body the world offers man pleasures to be enjoyed and pains to be avoided. These call forth his activities in manipulating nature. When he acts on the world he gets a knowledge of the world as object and of himself as actor. The resulting pleasure and pain intensify this knowledge of self as apart from the not-self. Desires and experience of pleasure and pain interact on each other, and he thus establishes relations between himself and other.

men. He therefore periodically returns to incarnation for the fruition of his hankerings and the satisfaction of the bonds established between himself and others. When R â g a d v e s h a m (desire and aversion) is transcended, compulsory incarnations cease.

Super-human beings also who normally have but subtle bodies sometimes take birth in human bodies. This is called A v a t â r a, a crossing over of the boundaries that usually separate the currents of human and super-human lives. This may be a voluntary or a compulsory incarnation. Kṛishṇa in the *Bhagavat Gîta* IV. 6-8 says, "Though I am not a being subject to birth and death and the Lord of born beings, I by my wonder-working power enter into p r a k ṛ i t i that is mine and am born in a body. Whenever there is a decay of right action and increase of lawlessness, then I make for myself a body, O Bhârata; for the protection of the well-doers and destruction of ill-doers and the establishment of laws I come to birth age after age." The *Purâṇas* abound in tales of superphysical beings being made to take physical births as a punishment, but an incarnation voluntary or involuntary is a limitation to the being that undergoes it, for while in a physical body, the laws of physical matter cannot be transcended even by the highest. But the body also affords the superphysical being opportunities to hold intercourse

with human beings and affect their destinies in a much surer fashion than otherwise, as is indicated in the Śloka s quoted above. If superphysical beings should from their own spheres act directly on the brains of man, it would be at the cost of upsetting the nervous, and hence the mental and moral, equilibrium of the man acted on. Inspired prophets have always been abnormal men in whom pathological conditions have been prominent and to them perfect sanity as we understand it has been impossible because their evolution has been so different from ours. For even an Îṣvara is not omnipotent in the sense that laws of being (material or immaterial) can be suspended by him. The only way He can directly affect human beings is by birth among them as a man. As Antaryāmî (inner controller) he turns the wheel of life; he is onlooker, approver, supporter, enjoyer, greatest sovereign and highest self in the body (*Bhag: Gītā* XIII. 22), but laws of nature (*Prakṛiti*) are immutable and she is the root of all mutations and qualities (*Ib: 13-19*).

Avatâra is popularly understood as a "descent" of Îṣvara into mundane regions. This is absurd. Îṣvara is everywhere and hence a "descent" would be to Him an impossible feat. Hindu writers take care to explain that what actually takes place in Avatâra s is but the manifestation, generally temporary, of a ray of Him, through the body of an

advanced human being, more than He is manifested in the heart of the ordinary man. Even Kṛishṇa said to be a "full" Avatāra became an ordinary man sometime before his death.

8 *Matter is mutable, but increate and obeys fixed Laws.*

Matter like the Ātmā is increate and indestructible. Creation *ex nihilo* and dissolution again into nothingness have been notions always obnoxious to Hindu thinkers. The Samskrit root Sṛij means to pour out, emit, beget and Sṛishṭi means emission or emanation. In the Vedas the self-existent is always spoken of as emitting or emanating matter as well as living beings by means of *tapaś*, meditation. Leibniz among European philosophers agrees with the Hindus in regarding creation "as a kind of emanation just as we produce our thoughts" (*Metaphysics*, tr. Montgomery p. 23). The chief characteristic of matter is that it is *dṛiṣya*, perceptible, that which becomes an object to the knower. It is *jaḍa i. e.*, its existence could be manifested only by the spirit that is the seer; it is not *svayam-prakāśa*, *i. e.* it cannot of itself manifest its being. It is *prakṛiti-vikṛiti*, mutable. It transforms itself into a series of phenomena during a cycle of manifestation (*kalpa*), each phenomenon being a modification of a previous something and itself soon modified into something else. This susceptibility to

change of name and form, *nâma rûpa*, as well as its objectivity are the primary characteristics of matter. Matter is also atomic, *Bhinnâ*, whereas the *Âtmâ*, cannot be broken up into minute parts. It has three primary characteristics or *Guṇas* which are the fundamental laws of its being—*Tamas*, *Rajas*, and *Sattva*. In the physical world, *Tamas* is the property of inertia and sums up the facts that particles of matter or material objects tend to retain their states of motion or rest and offer resistance to any force acting on them. It is the fundamental Law of all beings and is the primary definition of objective existence. *Rajas* indicates the second property of matter, by which we conceive of it as “not only that which offers resistance to change of motion, but also that which causes change of motion in other portions as of matter: it is not only the object on which force spends itself, it is the seat of this force.” (Merz, *Hist. Eur. Thought*, i. 336.) *Rajas*, therefore, is the Law of Force, embodying the Second fundamental property of matter as it shows itself to our senses. *Sattva* is the Law of equilibrium by which atoms and molecules, *paramâṇus* and *dvayaṇukas*, when they are parts of objects act and react on each other so as to reach equilibrium and to hold together and remain as objects. These three properties of matter, or *guṇas* as the Hindus call them, follow from the fact

of the existence of material objects. If they have to exist at all they must have those *g u ṇ a s*, hence they constitute the materiality of matter. They constitute, as it were, three cases of the so-called Law of self-preservation. If we try to imagine a physical world without one of these three *g u ṇ a s* of inertia, force and equilibrium we shall find that our world will dissolve into thin air before our mental vision. Hence they are *g u ṇ a s* more properly than Laws. This explanation of the action of the three *g u ṇ a s* in the physical world makes them exactly the same as Newton's famous three Laws of motion. It is being gradually recognised that Newton's Laws are not so much Laws of motion as factors that make up the concept 'matter'. The first and third Laws can scarcely be called Laws of motion. The second is as much a Law of motion as of matter. They are more properly the fundamental properties, *g u ṇ a s*, of matter, that which differentiates matter from what is not matter. They define matter and indicate the conditions of its manifestation. Matter manifests itself while in motion; that is why they are also called Laws of motion. In the earlier days, motion was regarded sometimes as an *en s r a t i o n i s*, sometimes as a thing in itself, because the Cartesian conception of material substance as consisting merely in extension was prevalent. But we can see "that matter without motion is as inconceivable as matter without extension, so that

Descartes' assumption that matter was there first as an inert lump and motion was put into it afterwards is illegitimate and irrational" (Pollock, *Spinoza his Life and Philosophy*, p. 115).

These three Guṇas condition mental modifications also. Mental events are of three levels, according as cognitions, desires and actions predominate in them. In the lowest level, Tamas, Rajas and Sattva appear automatic action, excited action, and deliberative action. In the level of desire, the three manifest themselves as all-compelling desire, the struggle of motives and Vairâgya, or regulated desire. In the level of cognition, the three Guṇas operate as ignorance, clouded intellect and perfect knowledge. The general tone of the mind, under the influence of these guṇas, is indifference, pain and pleasure. Thus the mind is as traiguṇya, conditioned by the three guṇas, as the body.

Thus we see that the conception of the three Guṇas is the widest and most helpful generalization that has been reached by philosophy. It embraces within its wide sweep all states of perceptible objects and all states of mind that we know of, everything that is mutable, everything that is objective to the P u r u s h a, and binds them in one general concept, Guṇas differentiated into the three conditions of the manifestation of the objective Cosmos. The inertia of physical objects, the

automatism of the mind, its subjection to desire, the failure of its powers of apprehension and insensibility to pleasure and pain are all comprehended under the one word, Tamas. Tamas is literally, 'being choked', hence darkness, and sums up in one word these characteristics and forms one of the conditions of the manifestation of matter. R a j a s similarly sums up motion under the constraint of force, excitement, struggle of desires, wrong apprehension and pain. R a j a s, literally, the cloudy coloured illumination of the intermediate sphere between the dark earth and the bright heaven, aptly denominates this condition. The common factor of equilibrium, balance, self-control, right apprehension and pleasure is conceived as Sattva, real being.

These three guṇas are not qualities of any substance, but the laws of matter, the modes in which matter can manifest itself. Karl Pearson defines scientific method to consist in "the careful and often laborious classification of facts, in the comparison of their relationships and sequences, and finally in the discovery, by the aid of the disciplined imagination, of a brief statement, or formula, which in a few words resumes a wide range of facts." Such a formula is a scientific law. In this sense, the Guṇas are the fundamental laws of matter. The word, law, associated as it is with the idea of a Law-giver is a rather unsatisfactory word un-

less we, as Lotze says, "give up the customary view according to which the Laws of reality are regarded as a self-subsistent power controlling the real and actual. They are nothing more than general forms of thought in which, a spirit contemplating the course of the world and comparing its different movements might sum up the whole system of it in one brief expression. What is thus briefly expressed is the thing realized by and through the own nature of things themselves, which are what they are and act as they act of themselves, so making it possible for us to comprehend their behaviour as a case of this or that law. Everything which we regard as a law or ordering of the world is just the world's own nature, and it is only our incorrect, though hardly avoidable way of looking at things which represents it as a rule separable therefrom and having already an authority from some other source to which this nature must submit" (*Philosophy of Religion* p. 76). In other words, the activity of matter found the laws and not the laws the activity. The three laws, or Guṇas, condition the manifestation of matter everywhere. What is not matter—Purusha, consciousness—can alone never be affected by the Guṇas, which do not belong to the sphere of the immutable Âtmâ.

That matter is also subject to Space and Time and causality follows from its being atom-

ic in constitution and Traigunya in nature. But though the evolution of matter is subject to time, matter itself is indestructible. The individual Purusha may turn from it and ignore it but it ceases not to exist. And when The Lord of the Universe withdraws His energies from it its evolution is but interrupted, for during Pralaya, matter continues to exist as Asat, Avyakta, unmanifested "as the shoot within the seed" (*Ṣaṅkara*).

(9) *The world-history is made up of alternating periods of activity and rest.*

Matter is in a constant state of flux. The largest periodical flux is that of pralaya and kalpa. Pralaya is the period when matter is avyakta, undifferentiated. It cannot then be cognized. The Guṇas are in a state of quiescence. Purushas are then also avyakta, unmanifest. Kalpa is the period of the manifestation of a world, or a system of worlds. Western scholars are of opinion that the doctrine of periodical manifestations and obscurations of the universe did not exist in the earliest period of the *Veda* notwithstanding the assertion of *Rigveda*, V. 190-3, that "Brahmā created as before." But western scholars are apt to forget that the three *Vedas* are, after all, compilations for purposes of Yajña (sacrifice), and were never intended to be religious treatises; for the matter of that, even the *Upanishads* are

but manuals of U p â s a n a (meditation) and religious doctrines can, if they appear at all in them, do so only by way of allusion. Hence the paucity or even the absence of references to any doctrine in these books cannot by itself be treated as evidence to prove that the doctrine had not been worked out by the ancient thinkers. It was just because the whole of the *Veda*—the former and the latter parts, the portion of ceremonial work and that of meditation, was merely a manual of ritualism that mîm â- m s a s were required to elucidate the theory and practice of the rituals. Therefore there is nothing to disprove the traditional view accepted in India that the doctrine of periodical dissolution and creation belongs to the earliest ages of Indian thought.

Nor is the doctrine so difficult or complicated as to pre-suppose a long previous course of philosophical development. Man naturally works from his own constitution to that of the cosmos. In the earliest savage times he attributed his own thoughts and sentiments to rocks and trees and animals around him. So to-day he extends the conceptions of force and of energy which he is conscious of in his own body to the objects about him and thence seeks to explain the cosmos. Just so, in olden times he extended the daily alternations of activity and sleep of his own body, j â g r a t a and s u s h u p t i to the universe and formulated the ideas of B r a h m â's activity (K a l p a) and sleep

{pralaya}. There is nothing specially modern in this conception that should compel the historian of Hindu thought to assign to it a later age.

Here it must be noted that the word *Nitya*, usually translated eternal, means not an illimitable future, as is understood in the West. Eternity is but time with its boundaries thrown to a great distance, just as infinite space, is but limited space, but with its bounds thrown far apart. Both phrases are freely used and few realize they are but words without any definite meaning behind them. On the contrary, Hindu philosophy invariably understands by *Nitya*, up to the end of this *kalpa*; a *śloka* of the *Matsya Purāṇa*, says "By immortality (*amṛitātva*) is meant (life) until the destruction of all beings (i-e. until *Pralaya* sets in). Immunity from reincarnation is life as long as the three *lokas* last." Indeed it is meaningless to extend Time, as we know it, into the state, called *Pralaya*. Time is related to the change of states of a perceiving mind and hence cannot exist, when the minds themselves are no more. The Hindu philosophy divides *Kāla* (Time) into two classes, *Khaṇḍa*, and *Akhaṇḍa*, discrete and continuous. The former alone, is time as we know it. The latter, duration, independent of change of states of mind, we can scarcely understand, since it transcends human experience. *Mait. Up.* vi. 15. says:—"There are two forms of *Brahma*, *Kāla* and

A k ā l a, Time and No-Time. That which is before the Sun is Akāla, devoid of parts ; and that which is subsequent to the Sun is Time, with parts." It is in this sense of A k h a ṇ ḍ a, that k ā l a is hymned as the source and ruler of all things in *Atharva Veda* xix. 53, 54. and that Kṛishṇa speaking as the Îṣvara, says in the *Bhag. Gīta* xi. 32, "Time am I, the destroyer of the worlds."

{10.) *The subtle elements that make up all objects are five corresponding to the five senses.*

The subtle elements, sūkshma bhûta, are conceived as elementary sensations. Thus smell, taste, light, touch and sound exist in a rudimentary, ethereal form outside man and also in his sensorium. They are called in many schools, t a n m ā t r a, lit., that alone, the pure root of sensation. Corresponding to the five senses, there are five t a n m ā t r a s which by their combinations produce the s t h û l a b h û t a, the objects of the world.

Western Science explains "the ultimate element of material constitution to be an electric charge or nucleus of permanent æthereal strain". "Each sub-atom with its permanent electric charge must be surrounded by a field of permanent or intrinsic æthereal strain, which implies elastic quality in the æthereal instead of complete fluidity ; the portion must therefore be in whole or in part a nucleus of intrinsic strain in the æther, a place at which the continuity of the medium has been

broken and cemented together again (to use a crude but effective image) without accurately fitting the parts, so that there is a residual strain all round the place" (Larmor, *Æther and Matter*, pp. 26. 27).

Thus have Western Scientists, with extraordinary experimental and mathematical skill, framed a picture of **Ākāśa**, *Æther*, modified to serve as the basis of light vibrations. Clerk Maxwell proved light and electricity to be identical, and hence the *Æthereal* strain charged with electricity is explained as the particular structure that helps us to imagine what corresponds to **Rûpataṇmâtra** or rudimentary light. But no Western Scientist has as yet started the question of what are smell, taste and touch. Are they also strains in the *Æther* and if they are, what kinds of strains? Most Hindu schools say that they also are modifications of **Ākāśa**, **tanmâtras**, roots of sensation, the *Vaiṣeshikas* only regarding them, as well as light, to be qualities and not modification, of atoms. Thus four different kinds of strains in *Æther* would be required to explain the roots of these four sensations. Then there is sound, which Hindu Philosophy conceives as a quality or modification of the unstrained, unmodified, non-atomic **Ākāśa**. Modern Science explains sound to be vibrations of air. The Hindu idea is that behind the air vibrations there is a modification of **Ākāśa**, not

of the kind that constitutes an atom, and this is the basis of sound. There is nothing inherently improbable in this idea that the five sensations are five different modifications of Æther. Outside the human body they exist in a *Tāmasa* or resisting form and constitute the elements of the Universe. Inside the sense-organs the same Æthereal modifications exist in their *Sātvika*, equilibrated form and hence the man perceives them as sensations. Western Science pictures the external causes of the various sensations as modes of vibration. This has led to the insoluble problem, how can a vibration outside the body become a sensation after it impinges on a nerve. To conceive of light or sound as vibrations as the physicist does, helps him to investigate their properties, but from thence to assert that the vibration is a fact, a noumenon, a reality independent of our thought, and that the sensation is a phenomenal representation of this fact by consciousness to itself is absolutely unphilosophical. For vibration is but a concept of the mind manufactured from experience of the motion of our bodies and itself but a phenomenal representation. It is equally unphilosophical to talk of consciousness responding to vibrations in the forms of sensations. This is (in the words of the *Yoga Sūtras*) a *vikalpa*, a form of words without any fact corresponding to them (1. 9.) The only idea we can attach to conscious-

ness is, as Hindu Philosophy points out, that of enlightener, what manifests or illumines that whose existence would otherwise be unmanifest. To speak of consciousness as responding to vibration is to attribute activity to that which cannot be conceived as acting. It is not an active agent, a manipulator of vibration into a sensation, a *déus ex machina* that mysteriously changes a vibration, a harmonious displacement of molecules of matter into a taste, a smell, etc. Such an explanation is metaphysics in the worst sense of the word—the use of language to conceal ignorance and not to clarify thought. Consciousness can enlighten, render conscious, make the man know what would otherwise be unconscious sensation, unknown to him, but it is impossible to imagine how it can respond to, *i. e.*, change itself, in the form of a sensation, when a vibration falls on it. The physical explanation of sensation that “sound light, heat, electricity and even the nervous influx” is due to “vibratory movements, varying only by their direction and their periods” is, as Binet lucidly points out, “but an artifice, a symbol or a process convenient for classification in order to combine the very different qualities of things in one unifying synthesis—a process having the same theoretical value as a *memoria technica*, which, by substituting letters for figures, helps us to retain the latter in our minds. This does not

mean that figures are, in fact, letters, but it is a convenient substitution which has a practical advantage" (*The Mind and the Brain*, p. 33). Motion is not less of a phenomenon, more of a reality than the five sensations, but is more easily capable of measurement. Otherwise the physicist can conceivably explain all sensations and motions, *i. e.* all phenomena in terms of form, or, as the Hindu mystic does, in terms of sound. From a philosophical standpoint it is a mere accident that our visual and muscular sensations seem to have acquired such a supreme importance that we invent theories explaining other sensations by imaginary visual and muscular events. But it is as valid to explain a sound as a vibration, as to explain a motion as a sound. "To measure the length of a body instead of applying to it a yard wand, one might listen to its sound ; for the pitch of the sound given by two cords allows us to deduce their difference of length, and even the absolute length of each." (*Ib.* p. 4.) Thus all scientific theories may be reconstructed in terms of auditory events, and sound held to be the parent of all material form; and we may understand why the Hindu calls sound (*nâda*), the first manifestation of the unmanifested. Hence the idea that vibration is an ultimate fact and sensations are its phenomenal forms, though it underlies all modern European thought, is philosophically absurd.

Moreover to say that a vibration affects consciousness is to attribute mutability to that which is immutable. The Hindu explanation is at least intelligible. Sensation is the same outside the body as it is inside the body. But inside the body it is illuminated by the conscious subject, who is then said to "know", and till it is known it is what we may call "unconscious sensation." Sensation exists outside the body as sensation and the five sensations by their combination constitute the objects of the world. It is in this sense that they are the five elements of the world. Hence also is the world perceptible by a mind. Thus sound inside the auditorium or in the universe, is but a special modification of **Ākâṣa**. The perceiving organ of audition and the perceived object, sound, are of the same nature, both being **Ākâṣa** or **Ṣabdātānmātra**, pure sensation of sound ; only **Ākâṣa** outside the body is not pure, unmixed, like the one in the organ of hearing, but compounded with air, etc., and hence the **Ṣabda** (the essence of sound) in the external **Ākâṣa** before it can reach the hearer must first be manifested as **nāda** or **dhvani**, or vibrations of air. As a commentator on Jaimini's *Mīmāṃsā Sūtras*, I. 13, says, "the still atmosphere which interferes with the perception of sound, is removed by the conjunctions and disjunctions of air (undulations, **vichī-taraṅga**) issuing from the speaker's-

mouth and thus sound becomes perceptible." Similarly in the case of the other senses cognition is rendered possible by the fact that the same substance exists inside the sense-organ as in the outside world. These are the five elements, so much misunderstood and hence ridiculed. This Hindu view of the existence of five *tanmâtras* or five elements or five modifications of Æther to account for the five sensations and five *sensibilia* is not as all opposed to reason or to modern ways of thought.

11. All energy in the Universe is personal, i. e. bound up with consciousness, though of varying degrees of intensity.

Besides consciousness and unconscious matter, the great generalization made from the phenomena of the universe is Energy. Energy is the link between these two. The only manifestation of energy of which we have first hand knowledge is the energy we expend in re-acting on the objects around us by changing their position or conditions. Hence when we observe bodies altering shape or position, we infer that some energy has been acting on them. That the manifestation of energy in the world other than by animals is not accompanied by any degree of consciousness is what is called the mechanical view of the world, and this view dominates modern thought. The opposite view, that all manifestation of energy in the universe

proceeds from conscious beings, visible or invisible, is the animistic theory of the cosmos, the *adhidaivata* explanation of it accepted by all Indian schools of philosophy. Of these theories the *adhidaivata* theory is certainly the more plausible, for the conscious exertion of energy by us is a concrete reality of our lives, whereas the idea of energy unaccompanied by consciousness is only an abstraction from our experience. The mechanical theory, like Euclid's theory of space, has been a concept of much assistance in understanding the cosmos, but neither theory is a percept of the world of experience. The extraordinary growth of modern science inspired by the mechanical explanation of the universe has made people forget that it is an abstraction and not a reality of conscious experience.

Of this trio, Consciousness, Energy and Matter, one view isolates Consciousness as Real Being and regards Matter and Energy as being *prakṛiti* or object. This is the view of the *Bhagavadgītā*, vii. 4—6:—"My atomic *Prakṛiti* eightfold, is Earth, Water, Fire, *Ākāśa*, *Manas*, *Buddhi* and *Ahaṁkāra*. This is the lower; learn now, O mighty armed, my *Prakṛiti*, higher than this, that which becomes living (*Jīva*) and by which the Universe is upheld. Know that these two are the wombs of all beings." Another view isolates *Prakṛiti*, and regards consciousness and *Śakti*,

or Energy, often personified as *Ambikā*, the world-mother, as the chief factor of the cosmos. As the opening stanza of *Ānandalahari* says “*Śiva* can create only when united with *Śakti*.” This is the *Śākta* view that has affected later Hindu thought so much. The view that modern science has evolved, which makes Nature, that is, Matter moved by Energy, the reality behind the Universe to the entire exclusion or neglect of Consciousness is nowhere represented in Hindu thought; for all Hindu Philosophy is animistic. Even the *Saṅkhya*, *Yoga*, *Purva mīmāṃsā* and *Vaiśeṣika Sūtras*, which ignore a Supreme Real Being—*Parabrahma* or even a moral Governor of the Universe, accept this scheme of the *Adhidaivata* hierarchies, troops of gods (*devas* and *asuras*) that inhere in nature and cause its operations. These gods are, some of them at least, not spiritually or morally higher than man; for man is the microcosm in whom all the elements of the cosmos exist. Himself is the *Puruṣa*; his mind, sense organs and action organs represent the various *devas*, and his bodies represent the subtle and the differentiated elements. Hence the Universe is represented in him in miniature. But the gods, though the field of their operations is much larger, are parts of the macrocosm. They have each one element to deal with and one kind of organ to control it by; nor are many of them capable of the high moral and

intellectual advancement that man can attain to. The animistic theory prevails in crude forms among the savage races of the world. Hence the West regards it as a theory fit only for savages, but the true philosopher does not estimate the value of philosophical theories from feelings of racial superiority. The modern impatience with animism is but a phase of the materialism that has obsessed the Western mind ; and surely an idealistic savage may have better intuitions than one who is the flower of modern civilisation but blighted by the canker of materialism. The prejudice against animism is, like the prejudice against determinism, due to a feeling that the conduct of conscious beings must be capricious irreducible to fixed laws.

But conduct of man or of nature, depending as it does on mind and body, takes place always according to fixed laws. The informing consciousness that accompanies it either in the human body or in Nature has no power to make it fitful or unamenable to the eternal Laws of matter. Hence the unerring mechanism of Nature's operations is quite compatible with its being enlightened by the consciousness of the gods.

The name animism is an unfortunate one suggesting as it does, totemism and similar associations. But the theory that personality of various kinds or degrees underlies all operations of Nature

is not at all crude. Many of the greatest thinkers of the world have accepted and expounded it, some admitting one Personal God, and others assuming many personal beings, calling them Gods, Angels, Powers, Devas, Asuras, etc. Materialism alone opposes it.

Leibniz, who shared with Newton the honour of presiding at the birth of modern scientific thought, perceived the danger of that thought lapsing into a forgetfulness of the intelligence behind nature and vigorously protested against it. In section 19 of his *Metaphysics* he acknowledges the validity of the mechanical explanation of nature so far as it goes, but adds that to neglect totally the intelligence behind nature would be "as if, in order to account for the capture of an important place by a prince, the historian should say it was caused by the particles of powder in the cannon having been touched by a spark of fire expanded with a rapidity capable of pushing a hard, solid body against the walls of the place, while the little particles, which compose the brass of the cannon, were so well interlaced that they did not separate under this impact,—as if he should account for it in this way instead of making us see how the foresight of the conqueror brought him to choose the time and proper means, and how his ability surmounted all obstacles" (*Ib.* p. 35). Leibniz uses this argument to establish the intelligence of the one God behind nature, but it does

not affect the argument if to that one supreme intelligence be added many subordinate intelligences. Animism, then, is not so terribly primitive a conception as it is said to be.

12. This energy is Prâṇa, which is intermediate between spirit and matter.

Western science conceives all forms of energy as motion, molar or molecular. We must remember that this picture of energy of all forms as motion is not a reality independent of our mind. It is a concept formed by us to help our halting thought to deal with the various physical phenomena which we desire to bind into one notion, and is not necessarily true outside the world of ideas. Hindu philosophy regards Prâṇa and not motion as the fundamental energy of the cosmos. Prâṇa is conceived as a power coming from or started by the Purusha and acting on matter. This conception of Prâṇa as power charged with consciousness which manifests itself as energy when it acts on matter and thus becomes visible outside the Purusha is a necessary corollary of the Adhidaivata explanation of the world.

The Sāṅkhya cannot admit that Prâṇa can start from the Purusha. The utmost that this school and the allied school of Yoga would allow is that Prâṇa starts into activity in matter when there is a union of Purusha and Prakṛiti.

If nature-powers (Devas) exist behind

nature all her energy must ultimately be immaterial in origin. The energy exerted by an animal or a man is primarily nervous energy. All the energy of animals is nervous energy till it leaves the muscles and acts on outside objects. This nervous energy is called Prāṇa. Western Science has for a hundred years unsuccessfully tried to explain nervous energy as a form of mechanical motion; Eastern Philosophy reverses the process and derives mechanical motion from Prāṇa, or energy accompanied by consciousness.

Prāṇa, corresponds to the Psychikon pneuma, animal spirits, of Greek philosophy, a category which is intermediate between spirit and matter, and brings them into relation with each other. Matter is ever changing, always in a state of flux. Purusha is immutable. He reflected, "What is it by whose departure I shall depart (from the body), by establishing whom (in it) I shall remain established (in it)? He emitted Prāṇa" (*Pras. Up. VI. 3-4*) as his empirical representative. Matter is atomic and unconscious; Prāṇa is continuous, that is, not discrete, and charged, as it were, with the consciousness of the Purusha. Purusha being above space, cannot himself move or be the direct cause of motion in matter. Prāṇa is spoken of as Vāyu or air, for air is the best symbol of an immaterial something which is the cause of motion, but is not at the same time pure

spirit. The energy of the Universe is but the *Prâṇa* of cosmic beings. *Prâṇa* is *Śakti* regarded as a material fact and not as conscious somebody. Being an intermediate category between *Âtmâ* and matter it partakes of the nature of both. It is capable of more or less, like matter, and is at the same time accompanied by consciousness. It connects as a bridge *Âtmâ* and matter whose characteristics are so opposed to each other that to speak of their union or their interaction will be as absurd as to say that linear magnitude is mixed with whiteness. Students of European philosophy are familiar with the difficulties of the connection of body and mind. This intermediate category solves all such difficulties.

This doctrine of Universal *Prâṇa* is developed in the Upanishad and *Âgama* literature and not fully worked out in the other *Darśanas*. It is not incompatible with their special points of view, but is not discussed by them because the *Darśanas* concern themselves with the discipline that they advocate, and do not refer to theories not immediately connected with the special mental training they prescribe.

13. The Law of causation — Karma — is supreme in the physical and mental worlds.

The Law of Karma is the supreme law under which the manifested Universe works. The binding nature of the relation of cause and effect

is part of the conception of the *Prakṛiti*. Both the physical and mental worlds being evolved from matter come under this Law. All beings that possess bodies, even if it be the highest being incarnated cannot be independent of this Law. The free spirit that has reached the self-realization, is alone above it, for spirit being immutable is "free". The fundamental idea of the Law of Karma is this. Every mental or physical process, every thought, desire, or force exerted on bodies is followed by a consequence which when not immediately visible, is called *Apūrva*, *Adriṣṭa*, whose nearest English equivalent is "potential energy," which manifests itself when suitable conditions arise.

"The experiences of the seen (physical world) and the unseen (subtle worlds) have their resting place in Karma and their root in *Kleṣa* (the afflictions of ignorance, egoism, etc.); as long as the root exists it fructifies as birth (in human or non-human bodies), life (therein), and experiences (pleasurable or painful). They lead to joy or grief according as they originate in good or evil" (*Yoga Sūtra*. ii. 12-14). Every experience is a *Samskāra*, a modification of the subtle body, which has a tendency to reproduce itself; and every man is "bound" by the *Samskāras*. They form the atmosphere which must influence the course of his thoughts, desires, and deeds in the present. It is not

every one of the Samskâras that can operate every minute of his life. For potential energy can become kinetic only when the proper conditions present themselves. That portion of a man's past that is operative in influencing a man's mind and the course of his experiences during an incarnation is called prârabdha (lit: begun to act). Those that yet lie deep within the inner recesses of his lingadeha and have not yet begun to manifest themselves during an incarnation are called samchita (accumulated), while every present act, every present thought, every present desire becomes stored in his subtle body as agâmi (augmentative), which goes to enrich his atmosphere of Karma and will react on him in the future.

The present course of a man's life, the circumstances in which he finds himself, the pleasures and pains that will reach him, the thoughts and desires that will rise in his mind and the actions that he will be constrained to do, all depend upon prârabdha. The Law of Karma* reigns supreme in the mental and physical worlds.

Hence all schools of Hindu philosophy are rigid-

* An oft quoted śloka shows the use of Karma as one of the names of the universal cause against which use some scholars have protested. "He, whom Śaivas worship as Śiva, Vedântis as Brahma, Buddhists as Buddha, the Naiyâikâs skilled in proof, as the Creator, those that delight in the Jain scriptures as Arhan, the Mimâṃsakas as Karma, may he, Hari, the Lord of the three worlds, give us the fruits of our desires.

ly deterministic. Man is not free but bound by his past conduct, is absolutely determined by the desires that operate on the mind and the *prārabdha* determines what desires should rise under any given combination of circumstances. Desires, actions, even the mind, being all material processes, the supreme Law of matter—the Law of causation—inviolably constrains man. Even the *mukta*, the liberated man must experience his *prārabdha Karma*.

(14) *Samsara, the course of Karma, is anādi, had no beginning.*

Karma, the sum total of causes, that remains potential during a period of *pralaya* and manifests at the beginning of a world-period (*Kalpa*) is described as *Anādi*, beginningless. *Anādi* is defined in the Hindu books to be “like a flowing stream whose origin beyond the circle of vision is unknown.” In tracing events to their causes we can push back our inquiries up to the point when the present world manifestation began. Beyond that point, it will neither be possible nor profitable to trace the current of causes. It is unphilosophical to assume that these currents must have started at some past point of time, for there are no grounds for such assumption. We know that matter is in constant flux under the Law of causation; but cannot think that there was a period when there was no such flux. If it

did not exist at some past point of time it could not at all have been originated. Hence the course of Karma is Anâdi, has always existed.

So too, Mûlaprakṛiti, causal matter, whether it be the non-existent Nescience of the Advaita, or the germ of objectivity of the other schools. The individual spirits (jîvât mât) too are Anâdi, for if they did not exist at any time no cause could have arisen to bring them into being. The Brâhmaṇas and the Upanishads very frequently speak of a beginning—Agra. This Agra always means, before the present Kalpa—world-period—and no more. Anâdi does not mean eternal. Hindu books speak of two kinds of beginninglessness, (1) Ajanyatva rūpa anâditva, beginninglessness of the kind of never having been born. This belongs only to Absolute Being. (2) Pravâha anâditva, the beginninglessness of a flood, above explained. All Hindu speculations about Nityatva, eternity, ought to be understood only in the second sense; thus the Nitya mukta's, eternally free beings, of the Râmânujîyas are those who were 'free' at the beginning of this Kalpa and the Nityanârakikas the eternally damned, of the Mâdhvas are those who will remain "bound" at the end of this Kalpa.

(15) *Moksha is the goal of human life and results from the training of the mind and hence reaching Moksha is a mental event.*

All human beings are *baddha*, bound, by the course of *karma*, the causes they have set going, also by the laws of the matter that constitutes their minds and bodies. The object of philosophy is to teach them to escape this bondage and to lead a life uninterrupted by compulsory incarnations. When this is transcended, man is *mukta*, emancipated. So long as the conscious spirit does not realise its nature and identifies itself with its body or its mind, it is not free. So long as the man's life is but the life of the material body and the material mind, which act according to fixed laws, all life is bondage.

What, then, is *moksha*, the state of freedom to attain which is the true goal of human life? The constant unbroken recognition of the difference between the nature of spirit and of matter, the knowledge that the operations of mind are foreign to, outside of, the real man, the consequent freedom of the spirit from involution into psychic life, and the perfection to which man may bring his mind by knowing the laws of its working. In the physical universe the modern scientific man conquers nature by obeying and utilizing its laws; the same the *mukta* does in the psychical world. The training for *moksha* therefore is a process of knowledge, a process of "discrimination of Purusha from Prakṛiti *Ātmā* from *Anātmā*." As the Samskṛit aphorism has it, "*Jñānādevatu kaivalyam*," liberation is

through knowledge alone. One necessary concomitant of the realization of man's true nature as a spiritual being is "deathlessness." For when he knows himself to be not his body but the immutable *Â t m â*, "the Lord of death runs away" from him, for the Lord of death has control over bodies alone and not over the eternal *Â t m â*. Another concomitant of the discrimination of man's real being from the unreal phenomenal forms of matter is the cessation of pain (*d u ḥ k h a, k l e ṣ a, t â p a*.) Pleasure and pain are but interpretations by *B u d d h i* of incidents of the flow of *P r â ṇ a* in the subtle bodies. Hence when the spirit, after his long weary pilgrimage, knows himself to be other than the subtle body or the mind, he feels pleasure and pain to be outside him. Life is no more a ceaseless storm of desires tossing the helpless mind about ; the long pilgrimage of man is over ; no more under the sway of something external to him, but self-ruled, self-determined, he reaches supreme peace.

This discussion of the common points of all the Hindu *D a r ṣ a n a s*, however brief, shows that they are practically agreed in regard to all vital questions regarding the constitution of man, the constitution of the cosmos, and the lines of the past and the future evolution of humanity. It is impossible to point out such a surprising unanimity among the sects of any other religion, or the schools

of philosophy of any other nation in the world. Hence it is that neither the extraordinary complexity of the subdivisions of sects that so distract the inquirer, nor the great changes of ritual and external manifestations of religion that the Hindu Dharma has undergone during the many thousands of years it has swayed the lives of the Indian peoples, nor again the impacts of the diverse foreign cults that have at various times assailed it, have at all impaired its vitality, but have only helped to show that it rests on the bed rock of truth, and will continue to prevail in the distant future when many modern philosophies will have been forgotten.

CHAPTER II.

METAPHYSICS.

EVER Since man began to think about the relations between himself and the world about him and to distinguish the hosts of passing phenomenal forms from the possible permanent nonmenon of which these forms may be temporary modifications, he has followed two different and opposed tendencies of thought, which may be called individualistic and monistic.

The first tendency is inspired by the ineffaceable sense of continuous personal existence which men feel and which refuses to be abolished under any circumstances. The other is the equally potent intuition which men have of the unity of all things, of the oneness of the life that pulsates in all beings. Hence philosophy has grown in two directions—two opposing theories have been advocated by thinkers—one in which the individual man is declared a real permanent factor of the cosmos, the other in which the manifold world is conceived as aspects of one Reality—whether that reality be a conscious Brahma, or unintelligent Nature. These latter theories are rightly called monistic ; but the

name dualism usually applied to the former is scarcely accurate, for they recognise, not two, but at least as many real Beings as there are human individuals, besides the real substances behind nature. Hence the name individualistic or pluralistic seems to be a more correct designation of these theories.

Kṛishṇa, in the *Bhagavad Gīta*, ii. 3, divides men into two classes—Sāṅkhyas and Yogīs, those fit for Jñāna yoga and those fit for Karma yoga.* To the former, meditation on the Self appeals; the latter prefer a life of action, one of loving service of the Lord of the Universe, or of some monistic abstraction, like the humanity of the Positivists. This difference between these two classes of men seems to be due to the preponderance of the representative or the affective elements of psychic life, of 'intellect' or of 'will' as Schopenhauer calls them. "If the normal man is made up of two-thirds will and one-third intellect, the man of genius consists of two-thirds intellect and one third 'will' (Schop. "*On the Primacy of the Will*. Quot. by Ribot. *Psych. of Emot.*, page, 390). The names Sāṅkhyas and Yogīs given above to these two classes of men have nothing to do with the

The words Sāṅkhya yoga and Karma yoga as used by Kṛishṇa are generally misunderstood. The former not only means intellectual discipline, but also includes the Yoga of Patañjali : whereas the latter includes what are understood as the religion of humanity and as theism in Europe.

Schools of Philosophy, so called, but only imply that the former are inclined to the discipline of Contemplation and the latter to that of Effort; abstract thought attracts the former, concrete images the latter. In India, as in other countries, both kinds of philosophical theories have been expounded and vigorously upheld by their followers; those called Vaiṣeṣhika, Nyāya, Sāṅkhya and Yoga are individualistic: whereas those schools of thought which are derived from the *Upanishads* and *Āgamas* are directly or indirectly monistic. In this and the succeeding chapters the different metaphysical, cosmological and psychological theories of these schools as propounded in their earliest available expositions will be discussed. In later Indian philosophy, the doctrines of the sharply distinguished lines of thought of the six Darśanas have been mixed up. Hence, the original Sūtras or Kārikas will be quoted as far as possible, and the commentaries will be, as a rule, avoided, for they were made by later thinkers who mixed up the ideas of the different schools, partly because in their days, the Vedānta came to be regarded as the final truth, and partly because the absence of a historical spirit made it impossible for them to expound accurately the ideas of schools which were widely divergent from their point of view.

Metaphysics attempts to answer the question :—

what is the ultimate reality behind the changing phenomena of the Cosmos? Phenomenon means showing, *n â m a r ū p a*, name and form, and pre-supposes a noumenon, or "thing as such," which shows itself as phenomena. How many noumena are necessary to explain the Cosmos, and what is the essential nature of each noumenon are the fundamental problems of metaphysics; and these have been solved variously in India as in the West.

The Vedânta* believes the ultimate independent Reality to be One—*Para m-Brahma*. The Sâṅkhya and the Yoga schools posit two noumena, *P u r u s h a* and *P r a k ṛ i t i*, to produce the Cosmos. The schools of the Vaishṇavas and the Śaivas postulate the *t a t t v a t r a y a*—three ultimate realities, the Lord, the individual and the unconscious (matter). The Śâktas also admit three, which they conceive as the absolute consciousness, the active consciousness and matter. The Nyâya and Vaiṣeshika schools predicate no less than nine ultimate *d r a v y a s* (substances) which unite to produce the manifested worlds. We shall briefly discuss the metaphysical theories of each of these schools.

* It is unfortunate that the word Vedânta means different things to different Indians. In this book it is invariably used to mean the doctrines of the *Upanishads*, the *Bhagavad Gîtâ* and the *Sâtras* irrespective of the sectarian differences found in the *Bhâshyas*.

Section I. *Vedānta*.

The *Vedānta* teaches that there is but one Reality behind the world of matter and of individual beings and that is P a r a m B r a h m a. The earliest attempt to describe the Supreme Being, the one Reality that underlies what we call spirit and what we call matter is the well-known *Nāsadiya Śukta*, *Rig-Veda X. 129*. "Then Asat (proto-matter) did not exist. Sat (manifested being) did not exist. There was no air nor sky above. What enveloped (all)? Where, in whose protection? Was it water, the profound darkness? Death was not, nor immortality. There was no differentiation of night or day. That one breathed without breath, self-supported. There was nothing different from or above it. In the beginning darkness existed, enveloped by darkness. Undifferentiated was all this. That one which lay void wrapped in Nothingness was developed by the power of meditation." This is a description of the one Reality during the period of world-repose—P r a l a y a. Now follows a description of the same during the world-activity, K a l p a. "I will propound to you the Jñeyam (that which is to be known) knowing which one tastes deathlessness, the Supreme Brahman. It is called not Sat and not Asat. It has hands and feet in every direction, eyes, heads, and mouths on all sides, ears everywhere. It stands enveloping all things in the world. Devoid of all organs, it

shines with the functions of all organs. It is unattached, yet the supporter of all. Without Guṇas, yet enjoyer of Guṇas. It is without and within all beings. It is movable and withal immovable. It is unknowable on account of its subtleness. It is far and near. Indivisible, yet dwelling amidst beings as if divided. It is to be known as the supporter of all beings, their devourer and generator. It is the Light of Lights, is said to be beyond Darkness. This jñeyam is consciousness seated in the hearts of all, and is to be reached by consciousness" (*Bhag. Gītā*, xiii. 12—17). "Root above, branch below, Aśvattha they call it, indestructible, whose leaves are hymns; who knows it is the knower of Veda. Downwards and upwards spread forth its branches, nurtured by the Guṇas, the sense-objects its twigs. Downward its roots stretch, the bonds of action in the world of men. Its form is not here beheld, nor its end, nor the beginning, nor its foundation. This Aśvattha of well grown roots with the strong weapon of dis-passion having cut down, then the path has to be trodden, which having reached, no one returns. I follow indeed that primal Puruṣa whence has streamed forth the ancient energy" (*Ib. XV. 1-4*).

He is not Asat (the root of matter) for "There is no other seer than He, there is no other hearer than He, there is no other perceiver than He, there is no other knower than He. In that Akṣara

(imperishable), then, O Gārgî, the A k â ṣ a is woven, like warp and woof" (*Bṛih. Up. II. viii.-11*) He is not S a t (manifested being), for " That, verily, O Gārgî, the Brāhmaṇas call A k ṣ h a r a, not gross, not minute, not short, not long, not red, not fluid, without shadow, not dark, without air, without A k â ṣ a, not attached, without taste, or smell, without ears or eyes, without speech, without m a n a s, without seed, without P r â ṇ a, without mouth, without measure, having no inside or outside, it does not consume any thing, nothing does consume it," (*Ib. III. viii. 8.*) He is above the three limitations of space, time and causality (D e s a k â l a n i m i t t a). " This Brahma has no earlier or later, no inside or outside" (*Ib. II. v 19*). " Beyond good, beyond evil, beyond what is made, beyond what is not made, beyond what has been, beyond what shall be" (*Kaṭh. Up. ii-14*). This Supreme Being is creator in the sense that he emitted matter and then entered it as its soul. " He wished, may I be many, may I propagate. He meditated. After he meditated, he emitted all this, whatever there is. Having emitted it, He entered it. Having entered it he became S a t (Being) and T y a t (? Non-Being), defined and undefined, supported and unsupported, consciousness and unconsciousness, reality and unreality. The Reality became all this whatsoever. That is Truth, they say" (*Tait. Up. II. 6*).

P a r a m B r a h m a, the one Reality is thus the

one behind unconscious matter, the one behind all *puruṣas* (conscious beings). He is the immutable Being underlying the various manifestations of conscious lives due to the union of innumerable *puruṣas* with forms of matter. Unlike them, he is the Enjoyer without means of enjoyment, the Seer without an organ of vision, the Actor without organs of action. He is the source of the Energy that plays in the Universe. He is the matter of which the worlds are made, as well as the maker of these worlds. He is the Inspirer of all actions of all beings and yet the Dispenser of the fruits of those actions.

The *Vedānta Sūtras* of Bādarāyaṇa were intended as a *Mīmāṃsā*, an exegesis, embodying the principles of interpretation to be applied to the *Upanishads*. These latter being manuals of meditation, Bādarāyaṇa proposes to teach by his *Sūtras* how the various symbols and words used by the Rishis have to be interpreted, and how meditation is to be practised. The *Vedānta Sūtras* do not primarily constitute a manual of philosophy so much as a manual of exegesis. Incidentally, Bādarāyaṇa attacks the other disciplines prevalent in his days, like the *Sāṅkhya*, the *Vaiśeṣika*, the *Bauddha*, the *Bhāgavata*, the *Pāṣupata*, etc. and proves their philosophical implications to be opposed to the revealed *Śruti* and to reason. In philosophical discussion which is so common in India, solitary sen-

tences of the *Upanishads* or the *Sûtras* of the *Uttara Mîmâṃsā* embodying philosophical doctrines are frequently quoted ; hence people imagine that these are philosophical works. It is time that they are recognised not to be such, but that the former are manuals of *Upâsana*, heterogeneous collections of various methods of meditation, advocated and practised in ancient India, and of utterances embodying mystic experiences while in an exegesis or state of ecstasy, and the latter, but a manual of the same. Nor are the *Sûtras* complete in the sense that they contain unmistakeably Bâdarayana's ideas. For the word *Sûtra* means a thread. The *Sûtras* are series of single words, or phrases, or sentences, on which were hung the explanations and lectures of the *Rishis* to their disciples and were a sort of *memoria technica* intended to remind the disciples of the teachings of the Master. In many aphorisms, neither the subject treated of, nor what is predicated, is at all referred to ; e. g. "From connection" (*Ved. Sut. I. iv. 15*) ; "On account of the connected meaning of the sentences" (*Ib. I. iv. 19*). In course of time the lectures were lost, the 'threads', alone remained, without the pearls, lending themselves to the ingenuity of the commentators to hang whatever they liked on the *Sûtras* ; this and the wonderful dialectic skill of the *Âchâryas* have in the case of the *Vedânta Sûtras* made it all but impossible for an unsecta-

rian investigator to find out exactly the opinions of Bâdarâyaṇa on many points.

Yet there is no ambiguity about the fundamental position of the *Vedānta Sûtras*. "Then therefore the enquiry into *Brahma*. From which the origin, etc. of this (Cosmos). From being the source of the Scripture. That, again, from its close connection. From seeing (*i. e.* consciousness) being attributed to the cause of the world, unconscious matter is not (the cause; for it is) unscriptural" (*Ved. Sût.* I. i. 1. 5). The reality behind the Cosmos is thus a conscious Being. The *Sûtras* then explain that this Being is referred to in the *Upanishads* for purposes of *Upâsana* (meditation) by various personal names—*Ânandamaya*, the Blissful person (*Ib.* I. i. 12-19), *Hiraṇmayapurusha*, Golden person (in the Sun), *Akshipurusha*, person within the eye (*Ib.* i. i. 20), *Manomaya*, he who consists of mind (*Ib.* I. ii. 1-8), etc.; this Being is also referred to in the *Upanishads* by names of material substances—*Akâṣa* (*Ib.* I. i. 22), *Prâṇa* (*Ib.* I. i. 23), *Jyotis*, light (*Ib.* I. i. 24-27), etc.

This *Brahma* is the operative (*Nimitta*) cause of the world. "He is declared as described to be the cause with regard to *Akâṣa*, etc.' (*Ib.* I. iv. 14). Because the world is called (His work)" (*Ib.* I. iv. 16). He is also the material

cause of the world. "The material cause also, on account of its not being in conflict with the promissory statements and the illustrative instances" (*Ib.* I. iv. 23). But he is formless. "He is without form verily, that being the most important. (He is) as consisting of Light (which manifests forms), (this description) being not devoid (of meaning)" (*Ib.* III. ii. 14-15). "For this very reason (are used) comparisons such as (images) of the sun, etc." (*Ib.* III. ii. 18). "He is a v y a k t a, undifferentiated, so (the scripture) says. But (He is apprehended) by propitiation, according to pratyaksha and a n u m ā n a " (*Ib.* III. ii. 23).

He is the Supreme, though he is described in the *Vedas* by means of phrases indicative of limitations of place, as a bank (s e t u), a boundary etc. "On account of the designation of bank, measure, connection, and separation, (in the § r u t i), one might think there is some thing higher than He ; but (it is not so, for He is only called a s e t u) on account of some resemblance (between a bank and Him). (Such phrases only) subserve the purposes of the mind ; as when we speak of his four feet. (The statements of connection and difference) are due to difference of place, as in the case of light, etc. (being spoken of as shining in particular places, though all pervasive) and on account of the possibility (of only this sort of connection between Him and other existences).

Thus from a denial of everything else (He alone is the) Highest. His omnipresence (is proved) from declarations of (His) extent" (*Ib.* III. ii 30-36). He is also the moral governor of the world, the distributor of the rewards of actions. "From Him, the fruit ; for (that alone) is possible. And because that is declared by Scripture" (*Ib.* III. ii. 37-38).

Thus there is no ambiguity about the main Vedânta position. The noumenon of the world is one. In Pralaya that one can neither be regarded as conscious Being as we know it (S a t) nor as the unconscious (A s a t). He is above S a t and above A s a t. These two are aspects of Him, but yet are apprehended apart from Him. He is the one source of life, the one goal of aspiration to be reached by consciousness (J ñ â n a g a m y a).

Plotinus, in the third century A. D., learnt these Vedânta teachings, and taught them in Rome in words that recall the phraseology of the *Upanishads* and the *Bhagavad Gîta*. "In order to perceive the one it is necessary to receive from intellect a declaration of what intellect is able to accomplish. Intellect, however, is able to see either things prior to itself, or things pertaining to itself, or things affected by itself. And the things indeed contained in itself are pure ; but those prior to itself are still purer and more simple ; or rather this must be asserted of that which is prior to it. Hence, that which is prior to it, is

not intellect, but something more excellent. For intellect is a *certain* one among the number of beings, but that is not a *certain* one, but prior to everything. Nor it is being (S a t); for being has, as it were, the form of *the one*. But That is formless and is not even without intelligible form. For the nature of *the one* being generative of all things, is not any one of them. Neither, therefore, is it a certain thing, nor a quality, nor a quantity, nor intellect, nor soul, nor that which is moved, nor again that which stands still, nor is it in place nor in time; but is by itself uniform, or rather without form, being prior to all form, to motion and permanency....When we say that the one is the cause of all things, we do not predicate anything as an accident to it, but rather as something which happens to us, because we possess something from it, the one in the meantime subsisting in itself" (Enn. III. ix. Tranl. Taylor). Spinoza, among modern European philosophers approaches nearest to the V e d â n t a metaphysical position. "God, or substance, consisting of infinite attributes, of which each expresses eternal and infinite essentiality, necessarily exists. Whatsoever is, is God; and without God nothing can be, or be conceived. God is the in-dwelling and not the transient cause of all things. God is the efficient cause not only of the existence of things, but also of their essence. Intellect, in function finite, or in-

function infinite, must comprehend the attributes of God and the modifications of God, and nothing else." (*Ethics*, I. Props. 11, 15, 18, 25, 30.) "Thought is an attribute of God, or God is a thinking being. Extension is an attribute of God, or God is an extended thing" (*Ib.* II. Props. 1, 9). Pollock thus translates Spinoza's metaphysical position in language suited to modern habits of thought. "We know the world under the attributes or aspects of extension and thought (A s a t and S a t), and in each kind the sum of reality appears to be inexhaustible. Our world consists of modes of extension associated with modes of thought ... But we have no right to assume that this is the only world; for this would be to set bounds to infinite being" (*Spinoza, His Life and Philosophy*, p. 167).

It is curious that one of the half-a-dozen sentences (logia) which modern research has traced to Jesus, but which is not found in the Gospels, is pure Vedānta. Such Vedānta logia were carefully eliminated from the Christian Gospels, possibly during the time when the early church parted company with myticism in the 3rd and 4th centuries of the Christian era, and Christianity entered a phase of materialism from which it has not yet emerged.

The *Vedānta Sātras* also discuss the relation between the individual souls and Supreme

Brahma as well as the relation between Him and matter. But the different Âchâryas have made these Sûtras yield different meanings absolutely opposed to each other. Thus, III. ii. 11, literally translated would run, "Not on account of place, though of the Supreme, two-fold characteristics; everywhere, verily" Śaṅkara reads this as "Not on account of (difference of) place also can twofold characteristics belong to the Supreme; for everywhere (Scripture teaches Brahma to be without difference)."

Rāmānuja makes this out as, "Not on account of place even is there any imperfection in the Supreme; for everywhere (He is described) as having two-fold characteristics." According to Madhva, it is, "Even from difference of place, no essential difference between the manifestations of the Lord should be supposed; for (Śruti declares of Him the identical character) everywhere." Again, III. ii. 17 runs thus:—"It is seen (in Śruti); and also is remembered (in Smṛiti)." Śaṅkara comments on this:—"That Brahma is without difference is proved by passages from the Śruti. The same teaching is conveyed by Smṛiti." Rāmānuja comments on the Sûtra as follows:—"Hosts of *Vedānta* passages (prove) His being devoid of faults and being the treasure-house of auspicious qualities; so, too, the Smṛitis". Madhva makes out this sūtra to mean that Śruti shows that perfect bliss

is the form of the Lord and Ś m ṛ i t i shows that the Lord's form consists of intelligence. Again that famous sentence of the *Upanishads*, "Tat Satyam Sa Ātmā Tattvamasi," has been the battle-ground of the Āchāryas. Śāṅkara in comments on it says, "In the sentence 'Tattvamasi' (That thou art) it is taught that 'thou' refers to Sat, real Being.....By 'Tattvamasi' (he) directly teaches the identity of the Self and Sat, Pure Being" (*Com on Chh. Up* vi. 16.) Rāmānuja explains it as follows:—"The word 'that' refers to Him who is the cause of the world, a mine of hosts of all auspicious qualities, without imperfections, without change, and 'thou' refers to the same Brahma specialised in the mode of a Jīva who is his own body, by his forms of the inner controller of Jīvas." (*Vedārthasaṅgraha*, p. 35.)

Madhva remarks on this passage, "the statement of non-difference (between the individual soul and Brahma) is due to his essential nature being knowledge, bliss, etc. ; which are qualities of Brahma (also)" (*Bhāṣhya on Ved. Sāt.*, II. ii. 29).

In one of his *Prakaraṇas*, called *Vishṇu Tattva Nirṇaya*, section *Navakṛitobhyāsa*, Madhva cuts the Gordian knot by proposing to read "Sa Ātmā, Atattvamasi," "He is the Ātmā, Thou are not that." This is the *reductio ad absurdum* of the favourite Hindu method of

deriving new ideas from old texts.

The Rishis of the *Upanishads* spoke as Upāsakas. Sentences like "tattvamasi" were intended to give pointed expression to experiences reached during the practice of Vidyās, methods of meditation, which abound in the *Upanishads*. They are psychological facts, at least to the one engaged in the mystic contemplation ; facts to be verified by following the methods of meditation prescribed, and not to be treated, as the Āchāryas, and more especially their later expounders have done, as texts to be wrenched out of their context and made the foundation of a philosophical structure built with a heavy load of argumentation. The Rishis spoke of Brahma from the intuitions reached during the rare moments of ecstatic communion with Him, arrived at after steady attempts at keeping down all mental activity and reaching a plane above the storms of human passions. By the more or less contradictory statements of the Real being scattered in the *Vedas*, and especially in the final sections of the *Vedas* called the *Upanishads*, the human mind tries to represent to itself what must ever be realized by transcending the mind ; mind being but an organ made of matter, human language, which is the expression of the human mind, can contain only expressions descriptive of objective material categories. To attempt to describe in

such language what is not mind, and further what is not conscious being as men know it, must necessarily lead to the use of contradictory ideas and phrases. The Rishis, who spoke from intuition, did not realise the difficulties that cold logic could raise against the contradictory statements that alone are possible when we attempt to describe the indescribable, to limit in forms of speech what is unlimited, to imprison in symbols of the mind (*pratīka*, that which is formed by out-going activity of the mind) what for ever soars in an atmosphere which the mind cannot reach. The Āchāryas of a later age were anxious above all to construct a self-consistent theory. Logical consistency can apply only to the systems built by the mind. An extension of the laws of mind to the region of the Absolute, which is above mind as It is above all regions of relativity, must lead to profitless logic-chopping, as it has done in the sectarian squabbles of the minor subdivisions of the Vedānta.

The principal commentators of the *Vedānta Sūtras* among those that have founded sects, namely Śaṅkara, Rāmānuja and Madhva, have imposed on them three widely different, but self-consistent philosophical and disciplinary systems called *Advaita*, *Viśiṣṭādvaita* and *Dvaita*. Their followers have accentuated the differences among these three, and minimised their

points of agreement, and thus carried on the sectarian movement till the modern Vedantic sects are hopelessly divided. Later, but original, commentators have formed other theories out of the same Sûtras. We shall briefly indicate the main line of divergence of these three original sects of the Vedânta.

Śaṅkara starts from the position of one who attempts to realize the nature of the Ātmā, the Self manifested in the heart of the individual, of one "who apprehends in the moment of the rise of knowledge (*i. e.* in the moment of realization of the Supreme) his Self and no second" (*Dakṣiṇāmūrti Stotrai*). When the consciousness is released from the bounding adjuncts of matter and mind, there is no more duality, no more relativity, all is One and that One is the Self. In such a state of exaltation the world appears unmanifested, "like the shoot within the seed." Hence Śaṅkara allows only phenomenal existence to the individual Self, Jivātmā (the self living in the world) and to matter. The following quotations from his Bhāṣya on the *Brahma Sūtras* indicate his view on these questions.

"We meet with two forms of Brahma (described in the Śruti, one) conditioned by the different kinds of name and form, and (the other) the opposite of this, devoid of all conditions whatsoever. Thus

where there is duality (or relativity) then one sees the other. When all becomes his Self, whom does he see and by what (organ)?” (*Br. Up.* IV. x. 15). “When he sees naught else, that is the high (state); when he sees something else, hears something else, perceives something, that is the low (state). That which is the high, that is the immortal (state); that which is the low, that is the mortal (state)” (*Chh. Up.* VII. xxiv. 1). “The wise one, who, having perceived all forms and made all names, sits calling (them by their names)” (*Tait. Ar.* III. xii. 7). “Without parts, without actions, peaceful, without faults, taintless, the supreme setu (bank) of immortality, like a fire that has consumed its fuel” (*Svet. Up.* VI. 19). “Not so, Not so” (*Brih. Up.* II. iii. 6). “Not great, not small” (*Ib.* III-viii. 8). “One place is defective, the other perfect”. These texts and a thousand others point out the double form of Brahma, according as it is the object of *Vidyâ* or *Avidyâ*, knowledge or Nescience” (*Ved. Sut.* I. i. 11). “(It is argued that) He who maintains the nature of *Brahma* to be immutable (*Kûṭasthabrahmâtma vâdî*) contradicts the tenet of *Îṣvara* being the cause (of the world); because the absolute unity (of *Brahma*) precludes the relation of the Ruler and the ruled. (To this we reply), No, for omniscience (and other qualities) of *Îṣvara* depend on the evolution of the germs of name and form, which are of the nature of Nescience.....Forming (as it were)

the very soul of the omniscient *Îṣv a r a*, are name and form, produced by nescience, incapable of being described as Its nature or as the nature any other than That, which constitute the germs of the phenomenal universe. This is the wonder-working power (*M â y â ṣ a k t i*) of the omniscient *Îṣvara*, *Prakriti*, as we learn from *Ṣrutī* and *Smṛiti*. The omniscient *Îṣvara* is other than those two (name and form).....Thus *Îṣvara* is dependent upon the conditions of name and form, produced by nescience, just as space is dependent upon the conditioning objects, jars, pots, etc. (before it becomes differentiated as the space inside a jar, the space inside a pot, etc.). From the standpoint of the phenomenal universe he is the Sovereign of those who are called *Jîvas*, (individual souls), *Vijñânâtmâs* (lit. knowing selves, those capable of perception and knowledge), who are his very self, but who depend on (bodies that are) the aggregates of organs of action, produced by name and form, based on nescience, resembling in this the space in a jar; hence *Îṣvara's* Lordship, omniscience, and omnipotence depend on the limitation of condition of the nature of nescience. From the standpoint of the noumenon the activities (involved) in being the Ruler, the ruled, the omniscient, etc., cannot subsist in the Self, cleared of all limiting adjuncts by right knowledge (*Vidyâ*).” (*Com. on Ved. Sut. II.i.14*). “In the supreme *Brahma*,

there is no duality ; this concept excludes no second being, real or unreal. The concept *Îṣvara* necessitates the concept of a causal 'fore-state' (*prâgavasthâ*) of the world, dependent on the *Îṣvara*, but without which *Îṣvara* cannot become a creator. This causal state of the world is called *Avidyâ*, nescience, for it is destroyed by *Vidyâ*, knowledge of the *Âtmâ* which secures for the *Mukta*, the released, once for all, the realization of the absolute unity of all life. It is also called *Avyakta*, unmanifested, for before creation it cannot be perceived ; sometimes it is spoken of as *Mâyâ*, illusion " (*Bhâshya on Ved. Sûta*. I. iv. 3). The theory that *Prakriti* is *Mâyâ*, unreal, the non-existent simulating reality, was started by *Ṣaṅkara* and done to death by his later followers. He himself is guarded in his statements, as might be noticed in the above quotations, and seems to insist more on *Avidyâ* (ignorance) being the cause of the imaginary duality where there is but unity ; but later *Advaitis* have, with the fatal, but dangerous, facility with which phrases devoid of content are handled by metaphysicians, created *Mâyâ* into a non-entity that masquerades as an entity, and read this doctrine into the *Upanishads*. All other schools of Hindu thought that have any touch with *Vedânta*—*Vaishṇava*, *Ṣâkta* and *Mâheṣvara* Schools have always protested against the notion of the world being an

unreal non-entity, as it is based on the real *Brahma*. Among European scholars, Colebrooke first noticed that *Mâyâ* was always used in the early (and genuine) *Upanishads* and *BhagavadGîtâ* for the wonder-working power of the Lord, and the use of *Mâyâ* for non-entity or for *Prakṛiti* was invented by the *Advaita* School. It is curious that Gough and, in our day, Deussen, should have so far allowed their critical faculty to be obscured by their familiarity with the *Advaita Vedânta* as to attempt to read the modern *Mâyâ* doctrine into the ancient *Upanishads*. To these scholars as to most Indian *Advaitis*, the word *Vedânta* means *advaita*; the *Śaṅkara* teaching and that, too, in its later developments, identical with that, of the *Upanishads*. They forget that *Śaṅkara*, though a great philosopher, claims to be but a *Bhâshyakâra*, a commentator, and that he did not even profess, as *Râmânuja* professes, to expound the *Sûtras* in accordance with tradition. If *Śaṅkara* quotes any previous commentator it is but to criticize him; he boldly starts a new line of thought following the logical necessities of his stand point and brushes aside any textual difficulties that might obstruct him. All system-builders that base their philosophical system on ancient inspired texts have to twist them to suit their purposes; but *Śaṅkara* does this more self-reliantly than the other *Āchâryas* who support

their interpretations by quotations from other books of doubtful authority. Śaṅkara relies chiefly on argument for this purpose.

The *Advaita* was first propounded by Gauḍapāda, a generation before Śaṅkara, in his *Kārikās* on the *Māṇḍūkya Upanishad*. It is noteworthy that Gauḍapāda and his disciple's disciple, as Śaṅkara is said to be, were both of them Śāktas, and base the whole *Advaita* doctrine on the fundamental fact of their realization of the unity of all life in the ecstasy of contemplation. It is to them a fact of experience, a "datum of consciousness" reached after undergoing a special discipline. Śaṅkara defines those whose "vision is superior" as those who are able to realize that the *Ātmā* alone exists (*Com. on Māṇḍūkya Kārikā*, iii. 16). He again speaks of the "*Advaitadrishṭi* (vision of oneness) of us, the disillusioned" (*Ib.* iii. 18). Whereas all their critics later than Rāmānuja, and, what is more curious, all their followers and exponents, too, treat it, not as a question of fact, but as a question of argument, not as a question of discipline, but of exegesis. This has led to the fearful degeneration of *Advaita* in India, where we find people who talk monism all day long, but lead the most selfish life imaginable.

Rāmānuja controverts the fundamental metaphysical positions of the *Advaita*. (1) He

does not allow that a non-differentiated substance could be established by any one's consciousness, because consciousness always implies difference. (2) He holds that the Śruti does not also teach a Brahma free from all difference (*nirviśeṣa Brahma*). To accentuate his opposition to this theory he delights in piling adjective on adjective describing the divine attributes. "The one cause of the evolution, maintenance, dissolution and release from *Samsāra* of the universe of sentient and non-sentient objects, of a nature different from all things other than Himself, on account of being hostile to all evil, and being one with infinite auspiciousness, of hosts of lovely qualities, boundless and unsurpassable, Universal *Ātmā*, Supreme Brahma, Supreme Light, Supreme Essence, Supreme *Ātmā*, known in all Vedānta by various words like *Sat*, etc. the Lord, *Nārāyaṇa*, Excellent *Puruṣa*" (*Rāmānuja's Vedartha Saṅgraha*, p. 11.) (3). He also holds that the theory of a beginningless *Māyā* (Nescience) cannot be proved by the accepted methods of proof. (4). Nor can such Nescience act on supreme reality so as to become the cause of creation, etc. For he argues that a perfect Being cannot become a prey to ignorance; hence, according to him, creation and relativity are due not to *Māyā*, but to the Love of the Supreme Deity for man and other individual souls. He allows the validity of the

realization of Unity (A d v a i t â n u b h a v a) of Gauḍapâda and Śaṅkara, but explains that this ecstatic consciousness of unity is not the consciousness of the Supreme Brahma, but that of the Self as apart from the limitations of matter (P r a k r i t i V î y u k t â t m â d a r ṣ a n a). A higher experience than this is the intuition of P a r a m B r a h m a by constant loving meditation on his divine attributes (b h a k t i, u p â s a n a).

He regards metaphysical questions from this standpoint and hence he teaches that Brahma is S a v i ṣ e s h a, characterized by attributes. He is the Self of both the individual souls (c h i t) and matter (a c h i t) and yet different from them. His views of the relation of the Supreme to individual Â t m â and matter can be gathered from the following:—"It is proved from the *Antaryami Brahmana* (*Brih. Up.* III. viii. 3-23), etc., that C h i t and A c h i t (conscious and unconscious beings) in their gross effected state (during a K a l p a) and in their subtle causal state (during P r a l a y a) form the body of P a r a m B r a h m a, and P a r a m B r a h m a is their Soul.....From words like Â r a m b h a ṇ a, etc. (*Chhand. Up.* VI. i. 4. etc.), it is known that the world is not other than the Supreme cause, the P a r a m B r a h m a. Now this is the truth—it is Brahma that is denoted at all times by all words because of His having for his body C h i t and A c h i t.

Sometimes (during *pralaya*) notwithstanding His possession (of these) as His own body the body of *Chit* and *Achit* attains a Subtle State, in which it is incapable of being designated apart from Him. This is *Brahma* in the causal condition (*Kāraṇāvaśṭhā*). At other times (during *Kalpa*) the body of *Chit* and *Achit* attains a gross state in which it is capable of being treated as something apart from him. This is the effected condition (*Kāryāvaśṭhā*) (*Sri Bhāṣya* on *Ved. Sūtt. II. i. 15*).

Thus according to *Rāmānuja*, the Reality is one, the Supreme *Brahma* and *Chit*, the conscious individual souls, and *Achit*, the unconscious forms of matter, are his bodies, *Avyakta*, indistinguishable from Him during *Pralaya*, but during *Kalpa* in a period of manifestation; not only *Vyakta*, distinguishable from Him, but related to Him in the *Śeṣhiṣeśhabhāva*, the relation of the Disposer and the disposable.

The *Viśiṣṭādvaita* has undergone a degeneration quite as bad as that noticed in the case of the *Advaita*. *Rāmānuja* preached an *Īśvara* of unimaginably excellent qualities, the goal of loving thoughts uninterrupted like a stream of oil, of whom all humanity and all nature was the body. His followers to-day have become an exclusive sect, marked off from the rest of the Hindus by glaring white and red marks cover-

ing their person and substituting an elaborate mummery for the simple life of loving meditation on the perfections of Îṣvara and service of men that the founder preached. It is also curious that Rāmānuja speaks more often of Iṣvara, though he maintains Nârāyaṇa to be the chief form of Iṣvara; but his followers call themselves V a i ṣ ṇ a v a s, the devotees of Viṣṇu, one of the Hindu Trinity. Rāmānuja, while controverting the psychological possibility of cognizing a N i r v i ṣ e ṣ h a Brahma, an absolute Being devoid of attributes, fully recognised the validity of the A d v a i t a experience of the unity of Â t m â as one of the goals of humanity, as legitimate as a means of immortality as the B h a k t i he advocated. (*Vide, Bhag. Gîtâ, Rāmānuja Bhāṣya* on viii. 20.) So, too, Y ā m u n a, his predecessor and the early Â g a m a s. Similarly Ṣāṅkara, while specially advocating j ñ ā n a y o g a in all his writings, admits that K r i ṣ ṇ a taught the easier K a r m a Y o g a to his friend Arjuna in preference to the *more difficult* path of contemplation. (*Vide Bhag. Gîtâ, Ṣāṅkara Bhāṣya* on xii. 13). But the disciples of these teachers have developed an intolerance which the founders of the A d v a i t a and the V i ṣ i ṣ ṭ a d v a i t a did not feel, and always tried to be-little each other's system and to abuse each other.

Before going into Madhva's views on these

questions, it must be pointed out that Śaṅkara's and Rāmānuja's interpretations of the *Ve-dānta Sūtras* agree in most points, except when in sundry places their special doctrines come into conflict. Madhva's interpretations differ widely from these. Thus according to the former two, *Ved. Sut.* II. 42-45 deal with the Bhāgavata doctrine, but according to Madhva they deal with the Śākta doctrine. By comparing Śaṅkara's and Rāmānuja's Bhāṣya s, Sūtra by Sūtra, a comparative study of their common points and divergences can be made. But Madhva's Bhāṣya strikes such original lines, that therein is visible most plainly how the traditional interpretations of the Sūtras having become lost, the Bhāṣya k ā r a s, commentators, were untrammelled and could make out whatever they wanted from the Sūtra s.

Madhva's views can be gathered from his Bhāṣya on *Ved. Sūtras*, II. iii. 28, 29. "The Jīva, individual soul, is certainly separate (from the Lord), for *Kauṣika Śruti* argues, 'The supreme is different from the multitudes of individual Souls. The Supreme is inconceivable. He is full, the group of individual souls is not full. He is eternally free, from Him release from bondage (is to be obtained). Hence he is to be sought: Since the essential nature (of the individual soul) is knowledge and bliss (which are also)

the qualities of Brahma, the individual soul is spoken of as not different from Him. Brahma is spoken of as the Â t m â of all (the universe) in the text. All this is indeed Brahma' (*Chh.* III. 14. 1) because all qualities belong to him". Under *Ved. Sât.* II. iii. 7, he quotes the following from *Brihat-Samhitâ* :—"The One, Supreme Purusha, Indivisible is called Vishṇu. Prakṛiti, Purusha, Time, these three are divided (*i. e.* limited) That Supreme, Hari, is immutable. Being undivided, He is of Supreme bliss, eternal, of eternal attributes; what is divided is of little power". The following quotation from Chapter V of *Sarvadarṣana Saṅgraha* show how very vigorously the Mādhvas, protest against the Advaita doctrine which they consider an insult to the most High :—"As stated in the *Tatvaviveka*, Tattva (ultimate substance) is acknowledged to be two fold, independent and dependent; The Independent is Vishṇu, the Lord exempt from imperfections and of endless excellence. From inference, too, difference (between the Supreme and the individual) is ascertained. The Supreme Lord is different from Jîva, as (the former) is the object of his service. He who is to be served by another is different from him, as a king from his attendant.....On account of their thirst to be one with the Supreme Lord (they make) a statement that the excellent attributes of

Vishṇu are like mirage and this resembles the cutting of the tongue in the desire to gain a fine plantain; since it will result in their entering *Andhamāmas* (Hell of utter darkness) on account of their offending Vishṇu.....The grand revelation, 'A difference between Jīva and Īśvara, and a difference between matter and Īśvara, a difference of Jīvas each from others, a difference between matter and jīva and a difference of material beings each from others, this is the fivefold difference in the universe.' This is real and beginningless; if it had a beginning it would have an end; but it has no end; nor is it illusorily imagined, for if it were imagined merely, it would cease; but it never ceases.....As the *Mahopaniṣad* says, 'Like a bird and the string (tied to it), like the juices of different trees, like the rivers and the seas, like fresh water and salt water, like the robber and the robbed, like man and the objects (that he sees), so are the Jīva and the Īśvara different, eternally differentiated from each other'".

Starting from these three different standpoints numerous theories, all calling themselves *Vedānta* have been evolved by later expounders. Each system attempts to be a self-consistent whole, displaying the keenest logical and exegetical skill. The *Bhāṣyas* and *Vṛttis* on the *Vedānta Sūtras* so far discovered amount to over 30 and

The *Āgamas*, on which has been based the Hindu religion of the past two thousand years took in the Sāṅkhya wholly. The *Āchāry* except that they oppose one Sāṅkhya tenet—that a Supreme conscious being is not the cause of the world—treat the rest of the Sāṅkhya teaching as revealed truth and base their exposition of the Vedānta on the Sāṅkhya. This has cut short the further evolution of the system and it remains exactly where it was two thousand five hundred years ago. Whether a future Indian Renaissance, inspired by the science of the West will take up the work thus interrupted is a problem whose answer is concealed in the womb of the future.

B. *Yoga*.

The metaphysics of the *Yoga* school is practically the same as that of the Sāṅkhya. *Puruṣa* and *Prakṛiti* are called by the more expressive names of *Drashṭa* and *Dṛiṣya*, the Seer and the Seen. Sight (*Dṛiṣi*) is the word used in this school to express the function of consciousness, as other schools prefer light (*Prakāśa*) or *Jñāna* (knowing). The Seer sees the operations of the 'inner organ', which in this school is called *Chitta*, not to be confounded with the *Chitta* of the later *Advaita* schools whose function is merely memory. All mental activity, the

unceasing succession of 'states of consciousness' (as they are called in Western philosophy) is termed *Chittavṛtti* in the *Yoga Sūtras* and the *Purusha* sees these 'states of consciousness'; hence he is the Seer. *Yoga* is the inhibition of the ceaseless flow of *Chittavṛtti* and while it ceases flowing, the Seer abides in his true nature (*Svarūpa*) of pure consciousness (*Yoga Sūtras* I. 2-3). "*Driṣya* (The Seen) has the three qualities (*Śīla*, *Guṇa*) of illumination, activity and rest and is the noumenon of objects and organs (and exists) for the enjoyment and emancipation (of the Seer)". (*Ib.* II. 18). *Prakāśa*, *Kriyā*, *Sthiti* of the *Sūtra* just quoted, stand for *Sattva*, *Rajas* and *Tamas*.

The noumenon of the *Driṣya* is called *Alinga* (lit., the indistinguishable), *Avyakta*, as it is called in other Schools. It is the *Pradhāna* of the *Sāṅkhyas*. "The *Drashtā*, mere vision, (consciousness), though pure (*i. e.*, devoid of any mutation), immediately perceives images of objects. common to others besides him (who has reached *Kaivalya*.) The conjunction (of the Seer and the Seen) is the cause that they attain the nature of the possessor and the possessed." (*Ib.* II. 20-23.) On account of this conjunction the Seer evolves into the possessor and the Seen is then apprehended as possessed. But when ignorance is removed, the real immutability of the Seer is grasped. Thus we see that, except for a complete change of

technical terms, the metaphysical theories of the Yoga are absolutely identical with those of the Sāṅkhya. The *Yoga Sūtra* designates itself Sāṅkhya Pravachana, exposition of Sāṅkhya. The *Sarvadarśana Saṅgraha* sums up the Yoga arguments regarding the immutability of the Seer in these words:—"Chiti-śakti (lit. the power of 'knowing', consciousness) is devoid of mutation because it always 'knows' (the mental modifications). If this Puruṣa were mutable, he could not always know mental modifications, as the mutable is inconstant (in its action). As the Puruṣa who is of the nature of consciousness remains always the Superintendent, his essentially pure nature is always maintained. Whenever it (his nature) is (apparently) affected (lit. clouded) by (the shadow of) any object whatsoever (that is perceived by him), it is the Drīṣya, the object that always receives his light and is illuminated by it. Hence the Puruṣa is (really) unaffected (during a perception) and it follows he is always knowing and is always above the suspicion of mutability. The Chitta it is that is (really) affected by objects and then that object is perceived. When it is not affected (by an object), it is not perceived. Objects resemble magnets and the Chitta resembles iron and is susceptible of mutation because it is the seat of attraction and repulsion (by objects) which causes

their being known or unknown. Now (it may be objected that) as the *Chitta* and *Indriyas* (sense organs) which are of the nature of egoism are all-pervasive and hence always connected with all objects, therefore must be produced knowledge of all things always and everywhere. (It is replied that) though all-pervasive, when the *Chitta* is modified in any one body and by certain objects in contact with that body, in that body alone is knowledge (of those objects) produced ; not in other bodies. As this limitation is absolute, it is held that objects are like magnets and affect the *Chitta* which resembles iron by their coming into contact with it through the channels of the sense-organs. Hence modifications belong to the *Chitta* and not the *Ât m â* " (*Ib.* chap. xv).

Driṣya (matter) evolves as *Bhûta*, objects, and *Indriya*, organs, by which the *Drashtâ* comes in contract with objects. Objects and organs are *Dharmî*, the seat of *Dharma* or qualities. *Chitta*, the inner organ, being a mode of *Driṣya*, matter, cannot illuminate or manifest itself but must be lighted by *Purusha*. " The whole universe is but the *Chitta* tinged by the Seen (on the one hand) and the Seer (on the other) (*Yog. Sûta*. iv. 22). The Seer illuminates it and the Seen colours it a mixture of white, red and blue, the three colours representing the three *Guṇas*. As *Vyâsa* in his comment on this *Sûtra* says,

"It is but Chitta that, tinged by the Seer and the Seen, manifests as non-ego and ego becomes conscious and unconscious, though material, appears immaterial, and is called the totality of objects."

Among the innumerable Purushas that are in this world there is one called Îṣvara. The mention of Îṣvara in the *Yoga Sûtras* has made many people describe the Yoga as a School of theism; but this is extremely inaccurate; for the Îṣvara mentioned in the Yoga is in no sense God. He is neither the ruler of Nature nor the moral governor of the Universe. Out of the multitude of Purushas in the Universe, he is a special Purusha who was never touched by Kleśa, the defects of ignorance, egoism, desire, aversion, and clinging to life, and by the mental deposits left by Karma and their fruition (*Ib.* i. 14). In Him is fully developed the seed of Omniscience which every Purusha has. He is the ancient teacher whose life is unbroken by Time as ours is (*Ib.* i-25-26). The Îṣvara of Yoga Darśana, therefore, is neither the reality behind Nature, nor any Universal Being in which human selves find their unity. Except omniscience and mastery over time, He has no other divine attribute, His only function being that of an ancient teacher. Hence Yoga is in its tenets as atheistic as Sāṅkhya. Yoga is called in India Seṣvara Sāṅkhya, the Sāṅkhya which acknowledges the existence of

an Îṣvara; but when this phrase is translated 'theistic Sâṅkhyas, as is frequently done by English Scholars, it becomes absurd. For the Îṣvara here referred to is not the Lord of the world, but the Lord only of his devotee, and He is his Lord only in the sense that he figures Him in his heart as the mystic syllable 'Om' and this makes it easy for him to reach his own inner consciousness. Though the Îṣvara of Yoga is an inactive Purusha, it accepts, like the Sâṅkhyā, the adhidaivata, animistic, explanation of the life of nature. But this doctrine of the adhidaivata cannot make any philosophy 'theistic' in any sense of the word. On account of the great spread of Vedānta in modern India, later writers like Madhusūdhana have regarded Sâṅkhyā and Yoga as stages leading to Vedānta. German mysticism also, whether it appears as the realistic monism of Haeckel, who sees in matter the one noumenon of the universe, or the more popular Pantheism of many modern philosophers, discounting as it does the abiding value of the individual, arrogates to itself the title of final truth and calls all individualistic or dualistic theories empirical. This is absurd. Both monism and dualism are equally valid explanations of the cosmos. It is a question of individual temperament which explanation appeals to one. The human mind which forms general concepts to explain the cosmos to its

own satisfaction is swayed by the temperaments. The man of the rich, emotional cast of mind whose mainspring is his love to the Lord of the universe, whose greatest pleasure is service of the Lord of his heart follows the path that leads to monism ; for to him everything is his Lord, all beings, conscious or unconcious, but the Lord's body, and he thus reaches the concept of the one noumenon. If he shuts himself out of touch with the spiritual side of the universe and thus cannot reach the conception of Îṣvara, he invents the idea of nature or clothes with flesh the abstract idea of humanity and erects them as the objective of his emotional outflow. On the other hand, the man of the stern intellectual cast of mind prefers the path of meditation, trains himself in V i v e k a, distinction of Self and Not-self and reaches the dualistic interpretation of the cosmos. He may, like the A d v a i t î try to explain away the Not-self as really illusory and only empirically true and thus reconcile his theory with monism, but he is a dualist all the same, for his path is one of discrimination. Nor must we forget that after all both theories are but concepts of the mind, and not experiences of the spirit. Before the spirit can realise itself or the devotee can realise his Lord, M a n a s has to be transcended and the stage of theorizing has to be passed ; and when there is realization, concept-making is neither necessary nor possible.

Section III. *Āgama.*

The early Vedic religion was a cult of magic, a system of propitiation or constraint of Nature-powers (*Devas*) by means of sacrifices (*Yajña*s), offerings of animal fat (*ghṛt*, *vapā*, etc.) and fermented liquor (*Soma*), poured into fire regarded as the mouth of the Gods, and accompanied with the chanting of *mantras*. Some of these *mantras* were incantations of praise, and others combinations of sound having no meaning, being sometimes inarticulate cries ("like the bellowing of a bull, etc."). They were believed to please or constrain the *Devas* and thus to secure the fulfilment of the sacrificer's desires, whether these were the acquisition of material objects in this life or the enjoyment of pleasures in post-mortem states (*Svarga*). In the alignment of the *Yajña Śālā*, the sacrificial hall, were embodied the early notions of the structure of the Macrocosm, for even in the earliest days the idea of the world being a macrocosm and the individual man being a microcosm, a minified copy of the cosmos, was worked out. The well-known *Purusha Sūkta* which though later than the earliest hymns is certainly much anterior to the age of the *Upanishads*, proves this. "The moon sprang from (the Cosmic *Purusha*'s) *manas*; from (his) eyes the sun was born; from (his) mouth *Indra* and *Agni*, from (his) *prāṇa*, *vāyu* was born. From (his) navel was the middle region (*antariksha*)

from (his) head was the sky; from (his) feet the earth, the quarters from (his) ears." (*R. V. X. 90. 13, 14*). This subject is referred to in numerous passages of the Vedas (*Vide Śat. Brāh. X. iii. 3. 8., XIV. 2. 13. R. V. X. 16. 3. etc.*). Since all the gods were represented in the human body, methods of getting into communion with them other than by means of sacrifices were invented. These attempts were, in the first instance, but the conversion of the *bahiryāga*, outer sacrifice, into *antaryāga*, inner sacrifice, *bāhyapūja* (exterior worship) into *mānasapūja* (mental worship). The intermediate stage between *bahiryāga* and *antaryāga* is represented by the following quotation from *Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa XI. ii. 6. 13*. "One should say 'this is the *Deva yājī*' and 'this is the *Ātma yājī*. He is the *Ātma yājī* (lit: self-sacrificer) who knows, 'by this rite this member of my body is rectified,' 'by this rite this member of my body is restored'... He is the *deva yājī* (god-sacrificer) who thinks 'I worship the gods with this, I offer (it) to the gods;... (The latter) does not conquer so great a world as the other.'" Gradually the form of sacrifice was kept up but transferred to the region of the mind. An early example of this is quoted from *Tait. Āraṇ. III. i.*, where is described the *chidyāga* by means of which *Prajapati* created the world. "Thought (was) the sacrificial ladle (*sruk*); *chitta* (mind),—the *ghi*; voice

(v â k), the altar (v e d i); purpose, the grass on the altar; desire, the fire; knowledge, the (second) fire; the Lord of voice, the h o t â (priest); manas, the U p a v a k t â (assistant priest); pr â ñ a, the offering; equanimity, the a d h v a r y u." From these were developed the genuine vidyâs, methods of meditation, which are collected in the various *Upanishads*,* each of which contains the v i d y â s traditionally taught in the Vedic School to which it belongs.

Meanwhile other influences worked on the Hindu mind and carried religious thought in other directions. The multifarious gods of the Vedas were grouped under three classes, thus laying the foundation of the later doctrine of the T r i m ū r t i. The irrepressible instinct for unifying the multiform cosmic phenomena under one grand concept also worked from very early times and thus was evolved the idea of B r a h m a, the indefinable reality behind the D e v a s, the power that resides in the M a n t r a s and hence can be utilized by the M a n t r a v i t, the knower of the M a n t r a s, the B r â h m a ñ a, for the purpose of constraining the D e v a s, the same power that in the Macrocosm drives the Universe. "Through fear of Him the wind blows, through fear the sun

* Upanishad means literally 'sitting near by.' As the sitting posture (Â s a n a) is absolutely necessary for the practice of most v i d y â s (*Ved. Sut.* IV. i. 7-10), the word Upanishad came to mean a-v i d y a or a collection of v i d y â s,

goes ; through fear of Him, Agni and Indra (do their work), and Death runs, the fifth." (*Tait. Up. II. v. 3.*) This same Brahma is the power within the innermost Self of the man. "Who dwells in the Earth, is other than the earth, whom the earth knows not, whose body the earth is, who rules the earth from within, he is thy *Âtmâ*, the inner ruler, the immortal." (*Br. Up. III. vii. 3.*) "Who dwells in the (individual) Self, is other than the Self, whom the Self knows not, whose body the Self is, who rules the Self from within, he is thy *Âtmâ*, the inner ruler, the immortal." (*Ib. III. vii. 22.*) This identification of Brahma with the *Âtmâ*, of the God of the Universe with the God within the man, led to the development of the Supreme Science, the *Parâvidyâ*, which is the specific *Vedânta* discipline and attempts to soar to the greatest heights of meditation man is capable of.

But it is very few that can seek the Supreme in the silent recesses of the heart. In most men 'the senses run out, not towards the Self'; and they seek Brahma in the Cosmos without, in the world of object and not the subject. When the *Paramâtmâ* is thus thought of as the object He appears as the power of Nature, for That can never become the object, but is "the consciousness, to be reached by consciousness (in-turned), seated in the hearts of all." (*Bhag. Gîtâ xiii. 17.*) Search for

Him outside as Indra did. "He ran to That. That vanished from his view. He beheld in that very space, a woman, very brilliant, U m ā of golden hue." (*Kena Up.* iii. 11, 12.) She is the Supreme power "by which this Universe is upheld," symbolized by Gāyatrī in *Ckh. Up.* iii. 12 and *Brih. Up.* v. 14. This concept of Śakti, the Power of Nature, was developed from the much earlier one of A d i t i, defined in the *Nirukta* as A d i n ā d e v a m ā t ā, the mighty mother of the Gods. Even in the earliest hymns of the *Rig Veda* she is an embodiment of Power and the supporter of the Universe. She is described as "the luminous A d i t i, the Supporter of the Earth, living in Heaven" (*R. V. I.* 136. 3). Not only is she the mother of the Gods, but she is "the great mother of the devotees (*Suvratānām*), the mistress of the rites, the strong in might, the ever-young, the widely-extended, the protecting, the skilful in guiding" (*Vaj. Sam.* 21. 5). When the power behind Nature and that of M a n t r a s was erected into one objective entity—the world-mother, she absorbed all the functions of the ancient A d i t i. Gradually this idea, that B r a h m a if sought as an object, and not the subject of introspective vision is Śakti, that the objective form of the One without form is Cosmic Power, grew and appealed to the religious imagination. Śakti, Cosmic Power, became the recipient of worship,

both outer and inner ; both *Pratīka Upāsana*, worship of symbols in temples and at home, and *Mānasapūja* of *Ambā*, the world-mother spread in the country* and largely supplanted Vedic *Yajñas*. This gave birth to the literature of the *Āgamas* (literally, revelations), also called *Tantras* (lit. skilful acts).

At the same time the ancient movement, already referred to, of reducing the many Gods to three classes, each class under the headship of one chief God developed in different lines. The *Nirukta* of *Yāska*, and the *Bṛihaddevata* were the earliest attempts at what we may call the higher criticism of the *Vedas*, while portions of the *Bṛahmaṇas* represent the lower criticism. The critical movement of the *Nirukta* was snuffed out by a later ebullition of the mythœpic instinct, which seems so congenial to the Indian mind. The *Nirukta* taught, "There are three Gods, according to the expounders of the *Veda*, Agni whose place is the Earth, *Vāyu* or *Indra*, whose place is the middle region, and *Sūrya*, whose place is the sky." In the *Kenopanishad* Agni, *Vāyu* and *Indra* are spoken of as the chief Gods. This must have been the general belief in the age when the hymns of the *Rigveda* were compiled into a *Samhitā* (collection), for we find that the

* The horrible images and bloody rituals of the Nature-goddesses of the Dravidians were also adopted in this worship.

first hymns of each Maṇḍala of the *Rigveda* (except the ninth, devoted to So ma) are those in praise of Agni, the next generally of Vāyu and the last of Indra. In the *Taittirīya Upanishad*, Surya takes the place of Indra, but Indra (or Śakra) continued to be a chief God during the age of Buddhism. Indeed he was worshipped in temples in Southern India and Jāva, in the early years of the Christian era, when Buddhism was the state religion, as we find from Tamil Epics of eighteen hundred years ago. But long before this another Trimûrti had been worked out; Brahmā, Viṣṇu and Śiva who were minor dieties in the Vedic age, Brahmā being called Brahmanāspati or Brihaspati, and Śiva being called Rudra, supplanted the earlier Trinity. Śiva absorbed the functions of Agni besides those of some popular Dravidian phallic deity and Viṣṇu those of Indra and Sûrya.* Later on, Śiva with some and Viṣṇu with others became the chief person of the Trimûrti, on whom the heart might lean and round whose feet the emotions of the devotee might twine themselves.

Brahmā, though one of the Trimûrti, the Indian Trinity of the age that succeeded the final

* Innumerable Vedic passages prove that Agni coalesced with Śiva and Indra and Surya with Upendra, Viṣṇu. Krishna's defeat of Indra might refer to this latter incident. Brahmā corresponds to Vāyu as he is cosmic Prāṇa. He is identified with the atmosphere ..the region of Vāyu in *Atharva Sam.* X. ii. 25.

compilation of the *Mahābhārata* never became a supreme God like Vishṇu or Śiva. This has puzzled European Scholars who cannot understand why the creator, the first and greatest person of the Trinity in their religion, should be considered a secondary person in the Hindu Trinity. The Hindu framed the concept of the one noumenon of the universe not as a person, but as a substance behind Sat and Asat, personal consciousness and the unconscious (*R. V. x. 129*). Considered as an *object* of thought, the *same* was the active power behind the phenomenal universe, identical with the power of the mantras, the golden hued Brahmā, Brahmanāspati, the Lord of Hymns (*R. V. ii. 23, i. 40* etc.), later on conceived as a female deity, Śakti. Brahmā (male) never became a supreme personal God, for the Jñāna Yogīs, men of the intellectual temperament naturally preferred the higher concept of Brahma (neuter), the Impersonal Reality behind the Cosmos to be reached by āvrittachakṣuḥ, introspective meditation, as the eternal, immutable Subject, the ātmā ; and the Karma yogīs, men of the emotional temperament, when they did not worship Vishṇu, the active God of the developing universe (the Vedic Sūrya, the nourisher of all that is) or Śiva who manifests himself when the individual turns his back on the world and becomes an ascetic (the vedic Agni who burns the universe), preferred

the concept Śakti, universal power as a wider generalization than Brahmā (male), the same power exercising the one function of creation. Another reason why Brahmā did not attain to the position of Viṣṇu or Śiva is that, being the creator, he is no more an active deity and could scarcely reward or punish his devotees. It is the hope of reward and fear of punishment that is the basis of most of what passes for Bhakti (religious devotion) and Brahmā could not satisfy these human emotions. In later times Brahmā was degraded to the position of an Individual Soul (jīvātmā). Hence so few traces are found of any worship of Brahmā in India. The cults of Viṣṇu were called Bhāgavata or Pāñcharātra and those of Śiva, Pāṣupata or Māheśvara. These cults were in existence before the Christian Era. The Bhāgavatas are alluded to in an inscription of the second century before Christ. The *Mahābhārata*, which most critics now assign to the third century B. C., refers to the Pāṣupata and of the Pāñcharātra systems; and the part of the *Mahābhārata* where they are referred to is certainly not a later interpolation, but is at least as ancient as the bulk of the poem.

These monotheistic movements, the Vaiṣṇava and Śaiva, inspired by the need of a single, supreme, personal God felt by those who could not rise to the high levels of meditation on the absolute spread to South India, where they received a great

accession of strength, especially when opposed to Buddhism, which they killed out after a severe struggle which lasted a few centuries. This great development of monotheism in southern India was perhaps influenced by the monotheism of the Semitic races with whom southern India had commercial intercourse from early times. The sterner and more repulsive features of Śiva as well as the extremely realistic phallic emblems which represent him remind us of the Jahve of the Hebrews, and the sexual aberrations associated with Viṣṇu worship remind us of similar excesses in the valleys of the Euphrates and the Tigris. The specific tenets of the Pāṇcharātra and Śaiva schools were formulated in Northern India, for we find them referred to in the *Mahābhārata* and their technical terms are all Samskrit; but the movements became all powerful in Southern India, from whence they spread back to Northern India and have taken a more prominent hold of the Hindu imagination than any other of the numerous schools of thought or worship developed in India. The final extinction of Buddhism and obscuration of Jainism in India was due to these two waves of Viṣṇu-worship and Śiva-worship that spread North from the South about 5 centuries after Christ. By that time Buddhism and Jainism were themselves choked with Tantra practices, though without provision for devotion to

a personal God and therefore easily gave way to Tāntrika religions which provided for this Bhakti, so necessary to the emotional man. These cults utilized the architectural developments of Buddhism and Jainism and hence arose the Temple architecture of southern India. This architecture was probably also influenced by the Egyptian temple architecture, for southern India had from early times a steady commercial intercourse with Egypt as with Babylonia. Temple ritual was elaborated on a grand scale. This ritual was primarily based on the ceremonies of fetish-worship of the Dravidian races, many of which are still observed in villages and under wayside-trees in all their primitive barbarism. Into the Temple-ritual was welded elements from the sacrificial ritual developed by the Aryan Rishis. Thus was evolved the gorgeous ritual of the Temples which more effectively killed out the Vedic Yajñas (sacrifices) than the gentle banter of the *Sāṅkhya* and the *Bhagavad-gītā* or the more passionate denunciations of the founders of the Jaina and the Bauddha cults. Similarly the old fire-worship of the home (Ekāgni grīhya ceremonies) gave way to domestic idolatry, a minified copy of the temple worship. And the vidyās of the *Upanishads* became supplanted by mental worship of the two gods and the one goddess that now supplanted the innumerable gods of the

vedic Pantheon and the countless local and tribal deities worshipped from pre-Aryan times.

The worship of Śakti, Śiva and Viṣṇu by means of meditation, and of symbols and idols both in houses and temples gave birth to the three classes of Āgamas, called Śākta, Śaiva and Pāñcharātra. The Āgamas like the *Upanishads*, were the ultimate developments of the *Brāhmaṇas*, (though they contained other elements besides); hence the followers of the Āgama schools sought to prove their orthodoxy by interpreting the *Upanishads* in accordance with their own tenets. They even gave the name of Saṃhitā to them, as also the name Smṛiti, thus indicating their claim to be, what they really were, based on and regularly evolved from tradition. This movement gave birth to most of the later *Upanishads*, which unlike the earlier ones do not denominate the Supreme Being Param Brahma, but are expressly Vaishṇava, Śaiva or Śākta in their tone and are probably in many cases but Āgamas under the name of *Upanishads*. Many of the Āgamas themselves are called *Upanishads*, though not included in the recognized 108.

The *Bhagavadgīta* which is called an *Upanishad*, also the Smṛiti, *par excellence*, and the *Svetāśvatara Upanishad* are works of Vedānta, but show clear traces of the influence of the

Āgamas. Garbe has pointed out the influence of the *Bhāgavata* (Vaishṇava) *Āgamas* on the former. The latter bears equally clear traces of the influence of the Śaiva cult. Both works seem to be due to an ancient synthesizing movement in which was attempted a higher standpoint than the monism of the *Upanishads*, the pluralism of the *Sāṅkhya* and the *Vaiśeṣika* and the three *tattvas* (triple reality) of the *Āgama* Schools, a standpoint from which all three can be reconciled and treated as different aspects of the higher point of view.

The influence of the *Āgamas* or *Tānttras*, as they are more familiarly known, on Indian life has been profound. The living Hindu religion of to-day from Cape Comorin to the remotest corners of Tibet is essentially *Tāntric*. Even the few genuine *Vedic* rites that are preserved and are supposed to be derived straight from the *Vedas* e.g. the *Sandhyā*, have been modified by the addition of *Tāntric* practices. Equally profound has been the influence of the *Āgamas* on the development of *Vedānta* philosophy. Śaṅkara was a professed *Śākta* and his *advaita* exposition of the *Vedānta*, though overtly independent of the *Śākta Āgamas*, is influenced by *Tāntric* theories and his discipline by *Tāntric* practices. Rāmānuja who, according to Dr. Thibaut, expounds a less forced form of *Vedānta* and more near to the

ideas of Bâdarâyaṇa, the author of the *Vedānta Sūtras*, than Śaṅkara, was a Vāishṇava and regarded the Vāishṇava Āgamas as authoritative, though he too seldom quotes them to support his exposition. Madhva is so much under the Āgama influence that his *Bhāṣya* is but a string of Āgama texts with a few words thrown in here and there to connect them.

The Āgamas have all been kept secret, very few having been printed or being easily available in Mss. The names of 108 Pāncharātra Āgamas, 28 Śaiva Āgamas and 77 Śākta Āgamas are given as the authoritative books of these schools. Hundreds more are quoted in the commentaries of the few books that one can get at. The few Āgamas that are available now belong to different ages. The *Lakṣmī Tantra*, for instance, among the Vāishṇava Āgamas which is predominantly Śākta in tone, the *Pādma Saṁhita*, which is nearer to advaita than the modern Vāishṇava relishes, being decidedly ancient, and the *Parāṣara Saṁhita* and the *Bhāradvāja Saṁhita* which are highly sectarian and support specific recent tenets being decidedly of a very late age. In the case of the Śaiva and Śākta Schools, their common tenets are so many and specific differences so few that this test of age cannot be applied, but many of the existing Āgamas are

anterior to the age of Śaṅkara.

And we must also remember that, in the case of these writings, as in that of the *Rāmāyaṇa*, the *Mahābhārata*, the *Purāṇas* and the metrical *Smṛitis*, portions of the substance are very ancient, but the form has grown with time. The contents of the *Āgamas* are of unequal value. Here and there we meet with snatches of high philosophy, subtle psychological analysis of ecstatic mental states, and valuable descriptions of centres of *prāṇa* and lines of force in the subtle body, but the bulk of the *Āgamas* is but grovelling superstition, mostly of a revolting form, and endless details of dull ritual. Besides the *Āgamas*, this school has given birth to a whole series of philosophical works—of *Sūtras*, *Kārikās*,* *Bhāṣyas*, *Vrittis* and *Vārttikas*, besides independent works—an immense literature jealously guarded from the prying eyes of the modern inves-

* A *Sūtra* is ordinarily a series of extremely brief prose aphorisms, generally unintelligible without a Commentary. A *Kārikā* gives the substance of a *Sūtra* in verse form and is also terse. A *Bhāṣya* is the exposition of the supposed teachings of a *Sūtra* but really the teachings of the *Bhāṣyakāra* supported by a great wealth of argument and quotation. A *Vritti* is a further exposition of the same. A *Bhāṣyakāra* always strikes out an original line of thought and twists the *Sūtra* as he likes; but a *Vrttikāra* is supposed to follow the lines of a *Bhāṣya*. A *Vārttika* is generally a *Vritti* in verse form. A *Ṭippaṇi* contains brief explanations on a *Sūtra*, on the lines of some *Bhāṣya*.

tigator, but slowly sacrificed to the omnivorous poochies.

The Āgamas are generally divided into four parts (pādas,) Jñāna, Yoga, Kriyā, and Charyā. "Jñāna is knowledge of the Lord; that knowledge is called release" (*Pādma Samhita* I. ii. 6.) "Yoga is the restriction (bandha) of the unagitated chitta to one subject" (*Ib.* II. i. 3.) "Kriyā (embraces all acts) from ploughing the ground (for laying the foundations of the temple) to establishing (the idol) (*Ib.* III. i. 6). Charyā is "the method of worship" (*Ib.* IV. i. 1). The Śaiva Āgamas regard that the last three parts together constitute Tapas to be learnt from a human teacher and that the first, i. e., Jñāna can be taught only by Śiva who comes as the Guru to the ripe disciple at the psychological moment and gives him an initiation (Dikshā) into wisdom.

In the earlier Āgamas of all the three cults the Supreme Real Being of the Universe, corresponding to the Brahma Paramam of the *Upanishads* and called Nārāyaṇa in the Vaishṇava tantras and Maheṣvara or Śiva in the other two tantras retreats to the background and all cosmic functions are attributed to Śakti treated as his wife but the really the predominant factor.

But in the Vaishṇava and Śaiva schools

the male god soon acquired a prominent position and they also broke up into different sects. Yet these numerous schools have some common characteristics : They acknowledge three tattvas—ultimate realities, (1) A supreme Being with the male or female aspect predominant. (2) the class of individual souls (3) the objective Universe. These three Realities (t a t t v a s) are given different names in the different schools, but their attributes and mutual relations do not vary much, though the terminology varies from school to school. These schools are also all agreed in opposing the M â y â - v â d a, the doctrine of the unreality of the world, developed from the teachings of Gaudapâda and Śaṅkara and reduced to absurdity by their modern followers. Says the *Paushkara Āgama*. " If, (as the Śaṅkaras say) the world is an illusive appearance of conscious being, the effected world will be a hollow unreality ; how can the world which is established to be really existing by all methods of proofs be a false transmutation of consciousness" (*Ib.* ii. 5).

The Ā g a m a s do not regard the world as a false show ; as Bhāskararāya says in *Lalitā Sahasranāma Bhāshya*, under the name *Mithyājagad adhishṭhānā* No. 735, " Really according to the belief of the T a n t r i k a s , who hold (the doctrine that) the world (is) a transmutation of Brahma, the Universe is real ; because as there is absolutely no

difference between Brahma and the world just as (there is no difference) between a pot and the clay (of which it is made), the reality of the universe necessarily follows from the reality of Brahma. As we accept that the difference (between Brahma and the Universe) is false, we accept all the texts declaring non-difference. From the unreality of difference (between Brahma and the Universe) it follows that the relation of supporter and supported is false. Hence the Vedānta theory of the illusoriness of the world cannot be accepted."

Intense *Bhakti*, personal Devotion, to the world-mother or to the world-father (whether called *Mahādeva* (Śiva), or *Nārāyaṇa*, characterises these schools. The root of this attitude of *Bhakti* to a supreme Being can be traced to that spirit of the vedic *Rishis*, which made them praise as the Highest, whatever God, high or low, they happened to invoke at any time—the spirit which Max Muller has labelled Henotheism. The development of the *Āgama* schools gave a great impetus to *Bhakti* by concentrating the attention on one Deva and this resulted in an extreme development of *Bhakti*, a devotion that expressed itself in an absorbing love, a complete self-surrender, which the want of a sense of humour led to such ridiculous extremes that the devotee's life became one orgie of singing and dancing and worse.

Another common characteristic of these *Āgama*

Schools is their intimate association with abnormal manifestations of the sexual instinct. The emotional nature of man is the common root of devotion to a superhuman being as well as to human beings and the habit of self-abandonment to a divine being which grows with devotion easily degenerates into self-abandonment of different kinds. Hence there exists in India to-day debased forms of Ś a k t i-worship, Ś i v a-worship, and V i ś h ṇ u-worship much too revolting to be described.

This devotional movement has, as in another countries, given a great stimulus to Art; Temple architecture, especially in Southern India, and Lyric (devotional) Poetry, especially Sanskrit, Tamil and Hindî have reached a high order of perfection; only for want of cultivation of the powers of observation, this poetry is not noted for any wealth of poetic images, but is oppressed, as other departments of life in India are, by a load of soul-suffocating convention. Music, Dancing (N â ṭ y a) and gesticulation (a b h i n a y a) have also been evolved under the influence of religious devotion; but the last art has degenerated into gross sensuality as its modern expounders are the women euphemistically called 'slaves of the Gods (d e v a d â s î s) attached to the Southern Temples.

The following notes regarding the early references to Śiva and Viṣṇu temples in inscriptions so far discovered and deciphered have been drawn up by my friend, Mr. T. A

Gopinatha Row, of Srîraṅgam and are extremely useful.

References to Viṣṇu-cult.

1. Udayagiri cave inscription of.....ḍhala, son of Viṣṇudâsa, grandson of Chhagala and vassal of the Gupta King, Chandra Gupta II, dated the Gupta era 82(401-2 A. D.) Sanskrit dedication of a rock-cut shrine to Viṣṇu.

2. Bhitari stone pillar inscription of Skandagupta, undated, recording the intallation of the image of the God Śârṅgi and the allotment of a village to it.

3. Junâgadh inscription of Skandagupta, dated G. E. 138 (457-8 A. D.) Repairs to the lake Sudarṇana by the governor Parnadatta's agent, Chakrapâlita. Chakrapâlita caused to be built a temple to Charabhrit.

4. Gangdhâr inscription of Viṣvakarmâ, dated 423-4 A. D. The inscription belongs partly to the Vaishṇava and partly to the Śākta (?) form of religion. It records that a person built a temple for Viṣṇu, the Sapta Mât-rikas and a well of drinking water.

5. Êraṇ stone pillar inscription of Budhagupta, G. E. 165(484-5 A. D.) Erection of a dhvajastambha to Janârdhana by a Mahârâjâ Matriviṣṇu and his younger brother Dhanyaviṣṇu.

6. Khôh copper plates of Mahârâjâ Samkshobha. G. E. 209(528-9 A. D. [begins with the famous "twelve-lettered mantra" (Om namobhagavate Vāsudevâya), of the Bhâgavatas].

7. Khôh copper plate of Mahârâjâ Jaganâtha G. E.

177 (496-7 A. D.) Grant of the village of Dhavashaṇḍika to a number of Brâhmanas for the purpose of a temple of Bhagavân.

8. Khôh copperplates of Mahârâjâ Śarvanātha G. E. 192 (512-3 A. D.)

9. Gaḍhwa stone inscription of G. E. 148 (467-8). found in the Daṣāvatāra temple.

References to Siva-cult.

1. Udayagiri cave inscription of Chandragupta II. undated. Records the excavation of a shrine of Śambhu.

2. Bilsad stone inscription of Kumâragupta of G. E. 96 (415-6 A. D.) Records the building of a number of minor buildings in the temple of Swāmî Mahâsena.

3. Bihâr pillar of Skandagupta.

4. Mandasôr pillar of Yaṣôdharma.

5. Kôsam (Kauṣâmbi) inscription on the stone image. of the time of Bhîmavarma G. E. 139 (458-9 A. D.)

These facts show how much these two cults were advanced in the Fifth century A. D. and that they must have had behind them many centuries of development.

We shall now discuss the fundamental tenets of the Āgama schools.

i. The Śākta or Devî Āgama

[The 77 Āgamas of this School are subdivided into three, (1) 5 Śubhāgamas, also called Samaya, which teach practices leading to knowledge and liberation (2) 64 Kaulā-

g a m a s , which teach disgustingly dirty practices supposed to develop magical powers (3) 8 M i ṣ r ā g a m a s , aiming at both. The 64 K a u l a Ā g a m a s are said to deal with occult arts, causing illusions, killing people by means of magic, exorcising demons, alchemy and sundry dirty practices of worship. They are called K a u l a , because they advocate the worship of Ṣ a k t i residing in k u l a , the perineum. This is also called the left hand path. The eight M i ṣ r a Ā g a m a s deal with Ṣ r i v i d y ā also and are hence the mixed path. The names of these Ā g a m a s are C h a n d r a k a l ā , J y o t i s v a t i , K a l ā - n i d h i , K u l ā r ṇ a v a , K u l e ṣ v a r i , B h u v a - n e s v a r i , B ā r h a s p a t y a , and D ū r v ā s a - m a t a . The five Ṣ u b h a ā g a m a s describe the right hand path, also called also S a m a y a ā c h ā r a , the worship of D e v ī throughout the s u s h u m n ā . They are the S a m h i t ā s named V a s i s h ṭ h a , S a n a k a , Ṣ u k a , S a n a n d a n a , S a n a t k u m ā r a . * Philosophical ideas are referred to only incidentally in these Ā g a m a s but are apparently regularly expounded in the Ṣ a k t i S ū t r a s , a work which, it will be worth the while of Mss. hunters to bring to light. Nine S ū t r a s from this work are quoted by B h ā s - k a r a r ā y a in different places of his L a l i t ā

* For fuller details regarding these works, V i d e L a k s h m i d h a r a ' s c o m m e n t s o n S a u n d a r y a l a h a r i , S l . 31.

Sahasranāma bhāṣya. The opening Sūtra says, "Consciousness, which is independence is the cause of the production of the Universe." Another Sūtra says "when one does not realize this he gets confused by his own Śakti and enters Saṁsāra." The next Sūtra adds, "when he realizes it, and his mind is turned inwards and mounts up towards the knower, he reaches (pure) consciousness." The various stages leading to liberation are indicated in the following:—"When one attains the bliss of (pure) consciousness, (he reaches) Jīvanmukti, which is unshaken identity with chit (pure consciousness), though he retains the consciousness of body, prāṇa etc." "This attainment of the bliss of (pure) consciousness (Chidānanda) is due to Madhyavikāśa", i. e., "by the destruction of doubt." "When he attains bala (power of will), he makes the universe his own." The last Sūtra describes the goal of life to be "the attainment of the Goddess of True Consciousness and the mastery over the Chakras (the centres of energy)." Judged from these quotations the Śakti Sūtras, if discovered, will prove a very valuable find. Many other works of this School are known only by name or by stray quotations by commentators].

The three tattvas (ultimates) of this school are—
(1) An impersonal, inactive Being called Prakāśa

or *Śiva* (to be distinguished from the active *Śiva* of the *Śaivāgamas*), of the nature of pure consciousness like the *Puruṣa* of the *Sāṅkhya* School, but differing therefrom in being omnipresent (*akhilānugata*). (2) an active, personal Being, called *Vimārśa*, *Śakti* or *Tripurā* of the nature of *Pūrṇāhambhāva* (full egoity), personal consciousness, who includes all individual souls; she is also called *Ahaṃtā*, I-ness (3) The insentient universe of matter, also called *Idaṃtā*, this-ness. Illumination, power and object thus form the triune manifested universe. In the *Śaiva* and *Vaiṣṇava* *āgamas*, the first Being of this trinity is an active Being, and the Second, His *Śakti*, occupies a subordinate position and in the latest developments of these schools almost disappears from view. The extreme *Śākta* view is embodied in the opening *śloka* of *Saundaryalahari*. "*Śiva*, when he is united with *Śakti*, is able to create; otherwise, the God is unable even to move." Kshemarāja in his *Śivasūtra Vimarśinī**, quotes the following from the *Mṛityujidbhātātāraka*. "That *Parāśakti*, my *Ichchhā*, potent, born of Nature (*Svabhāvaja*) is to be known as heat in fire, as of the form of the

* *ABhāshya* by Kshemarāja, a writer of the 11th Century, A. D. on the *Śiva Sūtras*, supposed to have been discovered or perhaps composed in the 10th Century by Vasugupta, the founder of the *Īśvara Pratyabhijñā* system of Cashmere. This work has been edited and translated by me and published by the Theosophical Publishing Co., Adyar, Madras

rays in the sun, that Śakti is the cause of all the worlds." Another famous tantra says,

"Tripura is the Supreme Śakti, antecedent to jñāna and other Śaktis, O dear one. She is differentiated as gross and subtle and becomes the mother of the origin of the Trilokī (triple experience of man). Her form is that wherein the totality of the (36) tattvas is dissolved. All evolution being hers, the Supreme is not required (to be active in the world process). The Supreme (Śiva) devoid of Śakti, is unable to do anything. He becomes omnipotent when he is united to Śakti. O, Supreme Lady, without Śakti, the subtle (unevolved, potential) Śiva has no name or support. Even though (he is) known, O Mahādevī, there is no use (lit. no gain of name or virtue). When he is meditated on, (there results) no grace, no steadiness of mind. When she is in the supreme path, she is of subtle form and thence attains the states of the seed and the plant (the subtle and gross universes) which had been absorbed in her." (*Vāmakeśvara Tantra* iv. 4-9).*

A MS copy of this work, also called *Nityāśhoḍaśikāraṇam* (the Ocean of the 16 Nitya goddesses) and its commentary, by Bhāskararāya, called *Setubandham* (the building of the bridge) has been kindly placed at my disposal by Dr. O. Schrader of the Adyar Library. This work is divided into two parts called *Pūrvachatuṣṣatī* and *Uttarachatuṣṣatī*. Lakṣmīdhara, a commentator on *Saundaryalahari* says that the *Vāmakeśvara Tantra* is a part of the *Āgama* called *Bhairava yāmala*. (Vide page 17. Mysore Edition of *Saundaryalahari*.)

Prakāśa and Vimarśa are explained by Bhāskararāya (the famous śākta scholar of the 18th century, who was a paṇḍit of the Tanjore Court and who has been already referred to) in his *Bhāshya* on *Vimarśarūpiṇī*, 548th name in *Lalitāsahasranāma*. "The spontaneous (svabhāvika) vibration of Parabrahma, who is Prakāśa, is called Vimarśa. It is said in the *Saubhagyasudhodaya*, 'His Śakti is spontaneous vibration, vimarśa. It is she that creates the mobile and the immobile (creatures of) the universe, and also destroys this world.'" The third member of this trinity, matter, is defined and subdivided as in the *Sāṅkhya* School. In fact the *Āgama* schools have completely absorbed the *Sāṅkhya* philosophy so far as the analysis of the material universe is concerned. They have elaborated them in sundry directions and superadded other tattvas to those of the *Sāṅkhyas* and thus, to some extent, destroyed the clarity and philosophical purity of the *Sāṅkhya* concepts. Instead of the 25 tattvas of *Sāṅkhya* this school divides the universe into thirty-six tattvas (principles) which will be explained in the next chapter. These thirty-six tattvas are again classified as three tattvas (ultimates), called (1) Sivattva, the supreme, (2) Vidyā tattvas, the subtle manifestations of Śakti and (3) Ātmā tattvas, the material universe starting from Māya and ending

with the earth. These three ultimates are the same as Prakāṣa, Vimarṣa and Idam̐tā. These three concepts are very clearly explained by Bhāskararāya in his *Bhāshyā* on his own *Varivasyā-rahasya*.

"Brahma called Prakāṣa is the pure knowledge resulting from the consciousness implied in the first person in 'I desire', 'I know, etc. It is associated with Omniscience, Lordship, Omnipotence, Plenitude, Immanence, and other powers. The vibration of a ray of Prakāṣa of the nature of bliss is called Parāham̐tā, the Supreme Egoism, Vimarṣa, the Supreme Lalitā, Bhaṭṭārakā, Tripura-Sundarī [names of the world-mother]. It is said in the *Viṣvaśarīra Skandha* of Virūpāksha Pañchāṣika "Lordship is Omnipotence (Power of Action), Self-dependence and consciousness. These are said by Śambhu to be the names of Parāham̐tā. As objectivity (Idam̐tā, literally, this-ness) is not manifested without the subject (Aham̐tā lit., I-ness) on account of the relativity of I and This (Self and not-self), the object, which is the content of the notion 'this', is caused by the power of Aham̐tā (the subject) or by Brahma who is other than it. That object is evolved from it." (*Varivasyā-rahasya*, commentary on I. 3.)

Prakāṣa is illumination ; it is the purest distillate of experience or rather the attenuation of

experience to purest consciousness of Being, the barest consciousness without being stained by the least touch of relativity; the nearest approach to Pure Being, to the Absolute that human thought or human language can hope to reach.

A m b ā (the world-mother) is the first appearance of a vibration in the absolute P r a k ā ṣ a , the first assertion of relation, of V i m a r ṣ a , distinction, which gives birth to all this universe. She is the power (Ś a k t i) latent in P r a k ā ṣ a beginning to manifest herself and give birth to Gods, men, and other beings. The motion that starts from A h a m t ā goes over to the other pole of I d a ṁ t ā , (This-ness) objectivity, matter. These three ultimates of the T ā n t r i k a s , Illumination, Power, and Object may be compared to Hegel's three doctrines of Logic—Being, Essence and Notion, and Idea. " Being is the notion implicit only ; its special forms have the predicate ' is ' ... Pure being makes the beginning ; because it is on the one hand pure thought, and on the other immediacy itself, simple and indeterminate ; and the first beginning cannot be mediated by anything, or be further determined...Being-for-self, as reference to itself, is immediacy, and as reference of the negative to itself, is a self-subsistent, the One...The terms in essence are always mere pairs of correlatives, and not yet absolutely reflected in themselves: hence in essence the actual unity of the notion is not

realized, but only postulated by reflection. Essence, which is Being coming into mediation with itself through the negativity of itself is self-relatedness only in so far as it is in relation to an other—this other however coming into view at first not as something which *is*, but as postulated and hypothesised—Being has not vanished : but firstly, Essence, as simple self-relation, is Being, and secondly as regards its one sided characteristic of immediacy, Being is deposed to a mere negative, to a seeming or reflected light—Essence accordingly is Being thus reflecting light into itself.....The Essence lights up in itself or is mere reflection : and therefore is only self-relation, not as immediate but as reflected. And that reflex relation is Self-Identity ...Essence is mere Identity and reflection in itself only as it is self-relating negativity, and in that way self-repulsion. It contains therefore essentially the characteristic of Difference. The Notion is the power of the substance self-realised. It is a systematic whole, in which each of its constituents functions, is the very total which the notion is.....The onward motion of the notion is no longer either a transition into, or a reflection on something else, but development. The realisation of the notion,—a realisation in which the universal is this one totality withdrawn back into itself and which has given itself a character of 'immediate unity by merging the mediation : this realisation

of the notion is the Object." (*The Logic of Hegel*, 2nd Edition trans. by Wallace, Sect. 83, 84, 86, 96, 112, 115, 116, 160, 161, 193).

ii THE ŚAIVA OR MÂHEŚVARA ÂGAMA

The Śaiva schools are so intimately allied to the Śākta schools that the literature and doctrines of one are quoted as authoritative by the other. The chief characteristic of the Śaiva school is that Śiva is the predominant Being and, especially in the later developments of these schools, Śakti is almost a negligible factor of the cosmos. The characteristic Theism of the Âgama schools led to Śiva being regarded as the Final cause of the Universe. But the Śaiva system became divided into three different schools in regard to the question how far causal efficiency belongs to the will of Śiva and how far to the actions of beings.

These schools are called (1) the Lakuliṣa-Pāṣupata school of Guzerat, which prefers to call the Supreme Being Paṣupati (lit. the Lord of cattle); (2) the Śaiva Siddhānta of Southern India, intimately allied to the Śākta; (3) the Pratyabhijñā school of Kashmīr, so-called because the fundamental teaching of the sect is that pratyabhijñā (recognition) of the Lord in the knower as well as in the known leads to liberation.

With regard to the question of the respective causal efficiency of Śiva and of Karma, the Pāṣupata School maintains that Śiva is a cause independent of the actions (karma) of individuals but that "the efficiency of actions depends upon (an individual's) power of action (kriyā-śakti) being unobstructed on account of conformity with the infinitely potent will of the Lord" (*Sarvadaśana-saṃgraha chap. vi*). The Siddhānta school regards Śiva as the Universal agent, but not irrespective of individual Karma. "(The fruition of) the two (*i e.* good and bad) actions reaches (individual) souls by the order of the Highest; His dependence on the karma of the individual does not detract from His independence, just as a king's depending on his guards to protect his city does not detract from the royal power; just as the holder of a magnet directs the motion of a needle, so the Lord directs the fruits of actions to the proper persons." (condensed from a lengthy discussion in *Sivajñana bhāṣyam*, a Tamil commentary of the 18 century on Meykaṇḍa Deva's Tamil Sūtras called *Śivañānabodam*, earlier than the 13th century). The Pratyabhijñā schools conceive Maheśvara to create the universe, "by mere force of desire", for he is of "unobstructed power, bliss and independence." This school, therefore, denies causal efficiency to all but the will of Maheśvara.

This difference of starting point has led to a wide divergence of views with regard to the nature and relations of the three metaphysical ultimates that compose the manifested universe.

(I) THE PÂṢUPATA SCHOOL.

The three ultimates are called by the followers of this school, the cause, the effect and the defect. The *Sarvadarśanasamgraha* quoting from the commentary on the first sūtra of this sect, "Now then we shall expound the rules of Pâṣupatayoga of Paṣupati," says, "Paṣu means the effect, for it depends on something ulterior; Pati means the cause, (Kâraṇa) the Lord, for he is the cause of the world, the Ruler." "The cause is the author of creation, destruction and sustenance (of the world, the effect). On account of differences of quality and action he is subdivided into Pati, Sādhyā etc. His Lordship consists in infinite knowledge and power, eternal supremacy, being the First of beings, possession of power, not adventitious, etc." "The Effect (Kārya) is threefold, Vidyā (sentiency), Kalā (the insentient), Paṣu (the sentient). Sentiency (Vidyā) is the characteristic of Paṣu. It is two fold, according as it is of the nature of Knowledge (bodha), and Ignorance (abodha). Knowledge is (again) two fold, according as its procedure is discriminative (viveka) or indiscriminative (aviveka). Discriminative

procedure which is based on evidence is called *chitta*. By means of *chitta*, all living beings cognize objects discriminate or indiscriminate when they are illuminated by the light of external objects.* Ignorance, again, is either characterized or not by the objects of the *Paṣu** The insentient (*Kalā*), while depending upon the sentient, is unconscious. It is, also, two-fold, what is called the effect and what is called the cause. Therein, what is called the effect is ten-fold, the five *tattvas*, *Prithvī* (earth) etc., the five qualities, colour etc. What is called the cause is thirteen-fold, the five organs of Cognition, the five organs of action, the triple *Antaḥkaraṇa*, *Buddhi*, *Ahaṁkāra* and *Manas* having the functions of certitude, self-cognition and desire. *Paṣu* is what is under bondage. It is, also, two-fold, the displayed (*Sañjana*) and the undisplayed. Of these, the displayed are those that are associated with bodies and organs; the undisplayed are devoid of them." "*Mala* (defect) is an evil condition pertaining to the soul. It is of five kinds, false conception etc. It is said (by Haradatta) that 'false conception, deviation from duty, attachment, interestedness, and falling (from the path), these five are the root of bondage, to be specially shunned in this system.'" (*Ib.* Chap vi). Besides the *Paṣu*-

* The reading of these two sentences is corrupt and the translation is unsatisfactory.

pati Sûtras, Mâdhava quotes, as authorities of this system, Haradattâchârya, and Nakuliṣa,* the author of *Pañchâarthabhâshyadîpika* and *Âdarṣa* about whom nothing is known.

(2) THE ŚAIVA SIDDHÂNTA SCHOOL.

The doctrines and religious practices of this school are propounded in 28 Śaiva Âgamas, a number of treatises on the Śaiva philosophy and a Bhâshya by Nîlakanṭha on the Vedânta Sûtras on Śaiva lines (usually called Śaiva Viṣiṣṭâdvaita, besides a voluminous Tamil literature, produced during the last 1,500 years and perhaps more interesting as literature than as philosophy. The cult of Śiva is "the living system which exercises at the present day.....a marvellous power over the minds of the great majority of the Tamil people."† It is "the most elaborate, influential, and undoubtedly the most intrinsically valuable of all the religions of India."§

The nature and relations of the three ultimates according to this system, are well-explained in

* The proper form of this name is Lakuliṣa, synonymous with Daṇḍâyudha, changed into Nakuliṣa, in Eastern and Southern India.

† Pope's *Tiru-vâṣagam* p. ix.

§ *Il-* p. lxxiv.

the Mṛigendra Âgama,* which is the jñānapāda (section dealing with knowledge) of the Kāmika, the first of the Śaiva Âgamas. "Siva is beginningless, free from defects (mala), the all-doer, the all knower, removes from the individual soul (here called, aṇu, atom, from its limitation), the web of bonds that obscure its nature. (Mṛig. Âg. ii. 1). The whole Śaiva position is thus "condensed in this one sūtra†" (Ib ii-2) Creation, sustenance and destruction of the Universe, obscuration (Tirodhāna), and liberation (of the individual soul), (these five) actions,§ with their agency and fruit are to be known as His. The creator of the world must be self-existent, otherwise there would be a *regressus ad infinitum* and there will be no final cause of Moksha. The essence of consciousness is the act of seeing (chaitanyam dṛikkriyârûpam) and it exists in the Âtmâ at all times and on all sides, for we hear that in the liberated, it is per-

* This and a few other Śaiva Âgamas, have been printed with Tamil commentaries in Madras. The Mṛigendra is being edited and translated by Mr. M. Nârâyanaśwami Iyer, Madras, who kindly furnished me with advance proofs of the first xi chapters.

† It is curious that Śaiva writers give the name Sūtra to Ślokas. The *Iṣvara Pratyabhijñā Sūtras* are a mixture of Ślokas and Sūtras as we ordinarily understand them.

§ The five functions are in the Śakti Sūtras, of course, attributed to Her and called Âbhāsa (illumination), Rakti (coloration), Vimarṣana (Examination), Bījāvasthāna (sowing the seed) and Vilāpanata (lamentation.)

fect. Though it exists, it does not manifest itself as such (in the unliberated), hence it is inferred that it is obscured ; and it is subject to one whose powers are not obscured (P a t i, the Lord), till it reaches liberation. The web of bonds (p â ṣ a j â - l a m) is on the whole of four kinds, the enveloping, the will of the Lord, K a r m a, and the work of M â y â. (Their) names indicate their nature. “(*Mṛig. Âg.* ii. 3-7).

The Â g a m a discusses in chap iii. P a t i l a k - s h a ṇ a m, the characteristics of the Lord. “ As the body and other things are proved to possess the characteristics of products, we must infer that there exists their Maker, different from them. He is everlasting because He is not limited by Time ; He is not confined to one locality, because He is all-per-vading. He is possessed of powers of creating gradually and simultaneously, because creation is both gradual and simultaneous. He possesses an instrument (K a r a ṇ a), because no action is seen (accomplished) without instruments. This (instrument) must not be taken to be adventitious, because the work has been without a beginning. This instrument is no other than Ś a k t i. Ś a k t i is not unconcious but a concious Being. As objects are infinite. she, (though) one, appears likewise (infinite) both in cognition and in activity. Action (creation &c. does not result from) the seed of preservation, creation etc. (K a r m a), or from P r a k ṛ i t i or from the in-

dividual soul (aṇu); there only remains the theory that it is the work of the Great Lord, the Free. He is Śiva." (*Ib.* iii. 1-5). "Action always proceeds from an embodied actor; in the world we see actions only of persons with bodies. Hence He, too, is like us. (But) the Lord's body is, unlike ours, one of Śakti; Mala etc. cannot attach themselves to it; that body is composed of the five Mantras and subserve His five actions * (*Ib.* iii. 8.)." "He is omniscient, because he is the Maker of all: for it is well-proved that one does a thing only when one knows the means, the constituent elements and the results. His knowledge is not veiled in anything, hence does not require any aid to manifest itself, It is without doubts and never at fault." (*Ib.* v. 12, 13). "Śaṅkara's knowledge is not based on perception, inference or authority. It shines pure, always, in all things," (*Ib.* v. 15.)

The second ultimate is the Paśu, lit. cattle, hence what is owned by, subject to, the Pati, the Lord. "The earth and the rest are effects; the Lord is the cause. They are no use to their Maker; nor to themselves because they are unconscious; nor are they purposeless, for that would be derogatory to their Maker. There only remains the

* The five mantras, *Tait. Aran.* x. 42. 47, called Sadyojāta, Vâmadeva, Aghora, Tatpuruṣa, and Îsâna, respectively corresponding to the five functions of creation, preservation, destruction, obscuration and liberation, are the forehead, the mouth, the heart, the guhya and the feet of Śiva.

theory that they are for the use of a third, different from both, the *Kshetrājña*. The *Paṣu*, for whose sake the earth and other things exist, is not the body, for the body is unconscious and hence it follows that itself must be for the use of another. (The body) cannot be a conscious being for it is an object of cognition (*bhogyā*) and liable to changes of state. Such things as cloth etc, which are objects of cognition and liable to changes of state are insentient. If it is said that the body is conscious, because while in the body, there is consciousness of existence (*Sadbhāva*), (we reply that) as there is no consciousness in a corpse, the body is unconscious. If it is said that consciousness is one of a series of transformations (that the body is subject to) (we reply) that (if so), memory cannot be continuous. But (continuous) memory is well-known. Hence the one that remembers is other than the body. He is not confined (to space), not momentary, not one, not unconscious, no non-actor, possessor of differentiated consciousness, for it is said that, after the destruction of *Pāṣa*, he becomes *Śiva* “ (*Mṛig. Āg. vi. 1-7*) The *Paṣu*, is, in his own nature, “the abode of eternal and omnipresent *Chit-śakti*” (*Ib. vii. 5*).

The third ultimate is *Pāṣa*, fetter, bond. It is threefold, (1) *Avidyā*, ignorance (2) *Karma* (3) *Māyā*. *Avidyā* is otherwise known as

Āṇavamāla, the defect due to the **ātmā** thinking that it is but **Aṇu** (atom), the taint of finiteness. The **Ātmā** who is pure consciousness and Independence imagines himself to be finite, bounded by his body, of circumscribed knowledge and power. As **Kshemarāja** explains, in his commentary on **Śiva Sūtras** i. 2, "Being infinite consciousness, he thinks, 'I am finite' ; being Independence, he thinks 'I am the body (**Anātmā**)' ". Thus the **Āṇavamāla** is of two kinds, (a) Ignorance of the fact that the **Ātmā** is consciousness (b) mistaking the body for the **Ātmā**, called respectively **Akhyāti** and **Anayathākhyāti**, non-cognition and wrong cognition. This **Pāṣa** is described as a veil over the soul known by a variety of names, **Paṣutva**, bondage, **Pāṣunihāra**, mist round the **paṣu**, **Mṛityu**, death, **Mûrchchhā**, swoon, **Māla**, defect, **Añjana**, pigment, **Āvṛiti**, envelope, **Ruj**, malady, **Glāni**, depression, **Pāpa**, evil, **Mûla**, root, **Kshaya**, decay, etc. It is one in all beings, beginningless, dense, great, possessed of numerous powers (**Śaktis**) residing in every soul and perishing when their time is over. (*Mṛig. Āg.* vii. 68). "The benign **Māheṣvarī-Śakti**, benign, blessing all, is included in the **Pāṣas**, for they act in conformity with them". (*Ib.* 11), The five powers of the Lord are exercised only with reference to **Paṣus** and are hence transforma-

tions (pariṇāma) of Avidyā.

For the purpose of bringing about the liberation of the individual soul, the Lord sets the malas evolving; so start the powers of creation, sustenance, destruction and obscuration of knowledge (tirodhāna or rodhāśakti); then the Śakti evolves into Anugraha, the power of benediction, in that individual from whom the powers of mala have departed and he becomes liberated. The Lord supports the malas during the whole course of their transmutations for the ultimate good of the Paśus dependent on His Grace. (*Ib.* vii. 11-22). The Second Pāṣa or mala, Karma, is described in chapter viii. It is the cause of the conjunction of the conscious soul with the unconscious body. It is local (*i. e.*, not omnipresent), manifold, temporary, associated with individuals, and continuous throughout the births. It is an auxiliary of the first mala, Avidyā. It is called karma, because it is produced by the activities of beings and adriṣṭa (unseen), because it is subtle (between the ending of the action and the beginning of the phala, the reaction). It is the producer and sustainer of the body, the object of enjoyment. It is threefold (produced by the body, the speech and the mind). It is good and bad, dharma and adharma, according as it is based on truth or falsehood. It ripens during (cosmic) slumber, prevails during a Kālpa

and merges in mâyâ during pralaya, but is never destroyed without being experienced (viii 1-5).

The third among the malas is Mâyâ, also called Bhedā, difference. This is the Yoni (*Śiva Sūtr.* i. 3), the womb of the world, the granthi-pâṣa (*Mṛig Śg.* ix. 1), the knot that imprisons the Âtmâ in ignorance. "It is single, the cause of misery, the seed of the universe, possessed of many powers and obstructs the individual till the power of its auxiliary (karma) should cease; it is omnipresent and imperishable. For the same reason a creator is inferred from the nature of the universe, it must follow that it has a material cause; for there is no cloth without thread. It is unconscious for its products are known to be so." (*Ib.* ix, 2-4).

The *Paushkara Āgama** describes the categories (padārtha) of the Śaiva School as follows:—"Pati, Kuṇḍalinī, Mâyâ, Paṣu, Pâsa, and the causes (kâraka), these are briefly the six categories, in the Śaiva tantras. That category is called Pati whose triple function is destruction, enjoyment and authority, which is unchanging in its nature, and possessed of powers (Śaktis). Kuṇḍalinī (otherwise called, Śuddha Mâyâ, Pure Mâyâ) is that whence Pati

The Jñâna pâda of this work has been published in Madras with a Tamil commentary.

gets destruction and other functions, by which the Pure Path (Śuddhādhvā) is produced, and she is the form where Śambhu (Śiva) is ever established. Mâyā (Aśuddha, impure) is that which produces bodies and organs for making possible, experience and objects; it is associated with men's karma. Paśu is characterized by cognition-action (dṛikkriyā) obstructed by limitation and is threefold, Sakala, Pralaya-kala, and Vijñānakala.* The fifth category, Pāśa, is said to be the totality of principles (tattvas) from kalā to the Earth (kṣhiti). Excellent Rishis, the sixth category is, in the tantras, the supreme action called Initiation (Dīkṣhā) whose fruit is experience, liberation and manifestation (of each individual as Śiva)." (*Ib.* i. 2-15).

Śuddha mâyā, otherwise, bindu (dot), Kuṇḍalinī (the coiled), Śivaśakti, the Power of Śiva, is a category intermediate between Śiva that is Pure consciousness and Matter that is unconscious. She is "the Upādhi, the cause of the differentiation of Śiva's function into destruction etc., described above (*Ib.* ii-1.) She is the cause of the bondage of all beings (aṇu) from Ananta (a person next to Śiva) downwards, and also of their release. But she is not the material cause of the world because she is chaitanya, conscious

More commonly, Vijñānakevala, For a description of these three, *vide infra*.

being, like *Śiva* and without transmutation like matter. (*Ib.* ii.2-4). She is the eternal sound,* the subtle connecting link between words and concepts (*Ib.* ii. 17). This eternal sound is divided into four kinds, called *Vaikhari*, *Madhyamā*, *Paśyantī*, and *Sūkshamā*. *Vaikhari* is what becomes in the throat the sound that is heard by the ear and takes the shapes of letters. *Madhyamā* is the form of objects mentally apprehended before they are associated with sounds. *Paśyantī* is undifferentiated like the yolk within the egg. *Sūkshamā*† is the pure *Jñāna Sakti*. (*Ib.* ii 19-24). These are called four forms of *Vāk* (lit. Voice, sound), one objective, the others subjective, and all produce states of consciousness of the *Paśu*. (*Ib.* ii. 25-26), The individual souls identify themselves with these forms of *Vāk* and thus result the three *Malas* (defects) which obscure cognition and action. (*Ib.* ii. 28-29). *Kshemarāja* defines the three bonds to be the three cognitions, like 'I am finite', 'I am thin or fat', 'I am the sacrificer etc', respectively illustrative of *Āṇava*, *Māyā* and *Karma Malas*.‡ These fundamental cognitions of limitation, of identity with the body, and of actorship exist in the mind either in the

* As oppsed to the rudiment of sound, *Sabdatanmātra* which is a product. † More commonly called *Parā*.

‡ Com. *Siv-Sut.* i-4.

form of words (*Vaikhari*), or of images (*Madhyama*), or of vague states of consciousness not yet differentiated into clear-cut images (*Paśyanti*) or, again, the mere possibility of such limited consciousness (*Sūkṣhma*). *Vāk*, Sound in its four forms thus marks all the stages of limitation of the individual soul. The names of the *Śaktis* (goddesses, energies of *Śiva*) that preside over these and the *mantras* indicating them are also combinations of *Vāk*. Hence *Śuddhamāyā*, the mother of the universe is supreme *Vāk*, the eternal sound; this is the doctrine of *Nāda*, 'voice of the silence', which is the basis of the *Śaiva* and *Śakta* disciplines.

Paśus (Individual souls) are "of three classes, (1) *Sakala* (2) *Pralayākala* (3) *Vijñānakala*. Listen to their characteristics in order. *Sakala* is one whose powers of cognition and action are obstructed by (*Āṇava*) *mala*, are associated (by *Māyāmala*) with *Kala* and other *Tattvas** for the evolution (of limited, human powers) and bound up with *Karma* (*mala*) for experiencing (pleasure and pain). *Pralayākala* is one who, like the preceding, has cognitive and active energies obstructed, but is released from contact with *Kalā* etc. as his *Karma* has been

* The phrases 'kalā etc', 'from kala to the earth (Kṣhiti)', mean 'throughout the manifested universe'.

experienced (and done with), though it is possible for him to be again brought under its influence" (*Ib.* iv. 2-5). The Pralayākala is one who is devoid of Karmamala and dissociated from Kalā etc. during Pralaya. "He is called Vijñānakevala in the Tantra, whose cognition and action, being obstructed by (Āṇava) mala are almost non-existent." (*Ib.* iv. 5-6). Thus these three classes are respectively under the sway of one, two and three Malas. Their paths are called Śuddhādhva, (pure path), Miśrādhva (mixed path) and Aśuddhādhva (impure path) "The Sūkṣmā Vāk pertains to the Śuddhādhva, the grosser (Paśyantī and Madhyamā) to the Miśrādhva, and the grossest, (Vaikhari) to the Aśuddhādhva." (*Ib.* ii. 30.) The doctrine of Vāk more properly belongs to the Śākta school, but the Śaiva and Śākta schools coalesce with each other in most points and, at times, it is almost impossible to differentiate one from another.

A later development of the Śaiva cult is that of the Liṅgāyatas or Jaṅgamas, founded by Basava, about the middle of the XII century in the reign of the Kalachūrya king, Bijjala. Its chief characteristic is a great revolt against the Brāhman supremacy and the abolition of caste. Curious enough Basava, himself, was a Brāhman. His successor, Chennabasava, was his nephew, son of

his virgin sister, Nāgalāmbikā. Like all reformers from Buddha onwards, Basava preached in the vernacular. Śrīkara made the movement orthodox by writing a *Bhāṣya* * of the *Vedānta Sūtras* in Sanskrit in the lines of this *Līṅgāyata* or *Vīraśaiṣa* sect. His fundamental position is indicated in the following extract. “*Brahma* is never *nirviśeṣa* (devoid of attributes). He is always bodied (*mūrtā*) as well as unbodied..... He is said to be one (only) before creation. The old teachers of the *Vedas*, *Reṇuka*, *Dāruka*, *Śaṅkha-karṇa*, *Gokaṇṇa*, *Revanāsiddha*, *Marulusiddha*, etc. have taught that the *advaita* texts of *Brahmā* (*i. e.* of the *Vedas*) refer to the stage before creation, as, then, the world manifested or unmanifested does not exist...The declaration that all knowledge (flows) from the knowledge of one, as in the illustration of earth (*Chh. Up.* vi. 1-4) is due to the identity of cause and effect. If *Prakṛiti*, the substratum of the world exist before creation, how then could there be oneness? To this, we reply, *Prakṛiti*, being but the *Śakti* of *Īṣvara*, is not different from him, like the attractive power of magnet, or the burning of fire. Hence those that desire *mokṣha* do not accept the theory of the falsity of the world.”† A detailed

* I have been able to get a mss. of the first *Adhyāya* of this work in Ganjam Dt.

† *Śrīkara's Bhāṣya* on *Ved. Sūt.* I. i. i.

account of the opinions of this sect is scarcely necessary, as it was but a social reform movement with a veneer of philosophy put on later to gain an orthodox standing.

The Brâhmans have as usual sapped the vitality of this movement by reintroducing caste into the sect. Thus, though the Lingâyata reformation started like the Buddhist with a vigorous protest against the caste system, there are now Lingâyata Brâhmans, Lingâyata Śûdras, etc. The modern Lingâyata is marked by his fierce hatred of Viṣṇu and his constantly wearing a liṅga encased in a silver box. *

The history of the fortunes of Śiva is more obscure than that of Viṣṇu. The Rîg-Veda

* Each sect relies upon an unconscionable misinterpretation of some vedic text or other for legitimizing some unvedic practice which has grown upon it. The Lingâyatas quote 'amritasya devadhâranobhûyâsam' [*Tait. U.* I, 4-1] 'O God, may I possess wisdom' and interpret it to mean, 'may I wear the God'. The Śaivas besmear their body with burnt dung and support the practice by quoting, 'Bhûtyai na pramaditavyam' [*It* I. ii. 1], 'Do not neglect greatness' and twisting its meaning into, 'Do not forget to besmear yourself with burnt dung'. The Vaishnavas quote a phrase 'charaṇam pavitram', meaning 'holy feet' and interpret it as referring to sacramental painting with clay and to branding. They have besides 'discovered' a whole Upanishad, *Gopīchandana Upanishad*, to uphold their elaborate painting of the body, similar to the *Lhasma Jâbâla Upanishad* 'found' by the Śaivas.

does not even mention him ; but speaks of R u d r a, sometimes as one God, at other times, as many, and of the M a r u t s as R u d r a ' s sons. In the other Vedas R u d r a gradually rose to first rank and in the age of the composition of the *Râmâyana* and the *Mahâbhârata*, he became identified with Ś i v a or M a h â d e v a and later on, became the last person of the Trimûrti. The phallic character of Ś i v a and his unlovely surroundings indicate the fact that he must have been the God of the aborigines amidst whom the invading Âryan settled and whose gods he had to adopt into his pantheon. The only possible reference to phallic worship in the Vedas is the scornful phrase Ś i ṣ n a d e v a s, * applied to the enemies of the Aryans, either demons or d a s y u s. But these aboriginal races have had an ample revenge. Mahâṣepha, (a huge membrum virile) is the God of a large majority of modern Indians. It is worshipped in temples†, in wayside shrines and worn round the necks of the devotees of the 'Great God,' not merely for luck as in modern Italy !

* *R. V.* VII 21. 5., X. 99 3. The word has been variously interpreted, but the most probable meaning is, 'those who have ṣiṣna for their God', or 'tailed demons'.

† The oldest Liṅg a m so far known is one discovered by my friend, Mr. T. A. Gopinâtha Row in the North Arcot District I am indebted to him for a description of this superlatively realistic idol which must be much older than he is willing to allow. He has also sent me a photograph of the

Lingam, which for obvious reasons cannot be published here.

"The temple of Paraṣurāmēṣvara in which the strangely realistic Phallus (Lingam) is set up, is situated in the village of Gudimallam six miles north of Renigunta, a station on the Madras Railway line. One of the inscriptions belonging to the temple informs us that it was completely reconstructed in the 9th year of the reign of Vikrama Chola (1126 A. D.). The present structure is not after the common model of the period to which it belongs. The Vimāna [dome over the idol] has the so-called Gajapriṣṭhākriti. A close study of the plan and sections whereof, hereunder given, would warrant the conclusion that the architect had distinctly in view the shape of the Linga and hence the vimāna might be better styled the Lingākṛiti-vimāna."

"Again the Linga of this temple is, as has been already stated, a most remarkable one in that it is an exact copy of the *phallus* and has the various portions shaped very accurately. It has been made out of a hard igneous rock of a dark brown colour, samples of which are found near the Tirumala hills. The Linga and the image of Śiva carved on its front side are very highly polished. Unlike the later representation, the image of Śiva has been made with only a pair of hands, the right carrying a ram by its hind legs and the left holding a water-vessel. A battle-axe rests on his left shoulder (from which perhaps he derives his name of Paraṣurāmēṣvara) and there is the usual matted and twisted hair (Jata) on his head. He is standing on the shoulders of a rākṣasa, whom the sculptor has represented with a pair of animal ears. The Linga is the only one of its kind in Southern India and from its sculpture it might be set down to about the 2nd or 3rd century A. D. Compare this image with the picture of a yakṣa given on page 36 of Grünwedel's "Buddhist Art in India" as translated by Gibson and Burgess. The face, the ears and

ear-ornaments, the arms and the ornaments on them, the necklace, the arrangement of drapery, particularly the big folds that descend between the two legs—all these are identically similar in both the image of Śiva of Gudimallam and the Yākṣha of the book referred to above.

“The temple has several old inscriptions the earliest of which is dated the last quarter of the 8th century. All of these inscriptions call the place in which the temple is situated, Tiruvir-pPiramaṭṭēdu,, and is said to be in the Śilainādu belonging to the Tiruvēṅgaḍakkottam, a province of the Western Vāduga country ruled over by the Mahābali-Bāṇarāyas, the powerful feudatories of the Pallavas of Kāñchi. Gudimallam now belongs to the Kālahasti Zamindari and is a petty village”

(3) THE PRATYABHIJÑĀ SCHOOL

The Pratyabhijñā School was founded in Kāshmir in the eighth century A. D. by Vasugupta, who "discovered" the "*Śiva Sūtras*" and taught them to Kallaṭa. Besides the *Śiva Sūtras*, the chief works of this School are the *Spanda Kārika* composed by Vasugupta or Kallaṭa, *Śivadṛishṭi* by Somānandanātha (900 A. D.), *Pratyabhijñā Sūtra* by Utpala, son of Udayākara, (930 A. D.), commentaries (*Vimarṣinī*) on the previous by Abhinava Gupta (993-1015 A. D.), and commentaries on the first work by Kshemarāja * (1030 A. D.). Bühler, who has fixed the dates † of these works in his "*Tour in search of Sanskrit Mss.*" wrongly divides the Kāshmir Śaiva philosophical works into two schools, (1) *Spanda-Sāstra* of Vasugupta (2) *Pratyabhijñā-Sāstra* of Somānandanātha and Utpala, because the word *spanda* occurs frequently in the names of

* For fuller details of this work, see my introduction to my English translation of it.

† The following scheme of dates of the writers of the Kāshmir school and Guruparamparā, indicated by vertical lines, is mostly based on Bühler's investigation.

Vasugupta, discovered *Śiva Sūtras*, 8th cent. A. D.

|
Kallaṭa, contemp. of Avantivarman, 854 A. D.

|
Somānandanātha, cir. 900 A. D.

|
1. Utpala, cir. 930 A. D.

the earlier works and *pratyabhijñā* in those of the later. But there is not enough difference between the teachings of these two sets of works to justify their being regarded as belonging to two different schools. *Spanda* is the ultimate principle of the universe—that of the spontaneous *vibration* accompanied by consciousness which underlies all cosmic processes and *pratyabhijñā* is the discipline prescribed by this school, which consists in the unbroken *recognition* of man's essential identity with *Śiva* and the falsity of every thing else. The earlier writers naturally treated the discipline as esoteric and the later ones, seeing that the tradition was getting lost, emphasized the *pratyabhijñā* discipline and did not treat much of *Spanda* which the earlier ones had amply discussed.

This Kāshmīr school regards all the *Śaiva āgamas* and the numerous books based thereon as authoritative and similarly, the writers of the *Śaiva Siddhānta* school quote all the Kāsh-

2. Nārāyaṇa, Trivikrama (?)

|
Lakṣhmanā Gupta, cir. 950 A. D.

|
Abhinava Gupta, 993-1015 A. D.

|
Kṣhemarāja 1030 A. D.

(Sometimes called Kṣhemendra, to be distinguished from his contemporary, Kṣhemendra Vyāsādāsa, author of works on *Alaṅkāra*, some *Tales* and other works.)

|
Bhāskara, Rāmakaṇṭha.

mīr writers as authoritative ; in fact, the analysis of the universe into the categories and tattvas of the previous section is accepted, *in toto*, by the Pratyabhijñādarśana. The chief difference between the two so far as metaphysics is concerned, is (1) the greater insistence on the spanda (active) aspect of the ātmā (2) the unreality of a substratum of the universe *apart from* Śiva.

Śiva, spanda, chaitanya, the one basis of the universe, is characterized by infinite consciousness which knows no limitations of Time and Space and by unrestricted independence (svachchhanda). "Complete independence in connection with consciousness is chaitanya. It exists only in the Lord Parmaśiva" (Khemarāja's) *Sivasūtravimarśinī*, i. 1.) "Though He possesses endless characteristics (Dharma), like Nityatva (eternality), Omnipresence, Formlessness, etc., yet nityatva etc., belong (also) to other beings (than He); hence Independence, which is not found in others, has to be described prominently (as His characteristic)" (*Ib.*) "From whence this objective universe and this group of organs (body), and manas, the internal organ, unconscious, yet simulating conscious being, attain the functions of creation, maintenance and destruction, that tattva must be diligently examined, whose Independence is always unobstructed". (*Spanda Kārikā*, 6-7) "As the Jīva (the experiencer, the individual) is the

self of all, the source of all (his) experiences, the object, attains identity with him by being experienced by him. Hence nothing other than *Śiva* exists, in the enquiry regarding word and object. The experiencer always and everywhere is seated as the experienced" (*Ib.* 28-29).

Cognition is a unique act, a fusion of subject and object. Of these two factors, the reality of the subject does not require proof ; for in the words of Kshemarāja, "all proofs depend for their validity on self-luminous consciousness". The other factor—the object—attains the appearance of real existence only when cognized by the subject. "So long as these (*Jîvas*) do not cognize, how can there be the known, O dear one ? The knower and the known are one *Tattva*." (*Śushmabhairava*, quoted by Kshemarāja). Hence the only reality of the Universe is *Śiva*. "As the consciousness on which all this effected world is established, whence it issues, is free in its nature, it cannot be restricted anywhere. As it moves in the differentiated states of *Jâgrata* etc., (waking, dreaming and sleeping), identifying itself with them, it never falls from its true nature of the Knower. The thoughts, 'I am glad,' 'I am sorry,' 'I am desirous,' manifest themselves in a place different (from *Spanda*), wherein the states of pleasure etc., are strong. Where there is no pleasure, no pain, no known or knower, nor again unconsciousness,

that alone really exists “ (*Śp. Kâr 2-5*). ”

From this point of view it follows that a second Reality, independent of Śiva, as the basis of the universe is unnecessary for explaining the cosmos. The cosmos is the projection outside of the experience of the inner organ, *Antahkaraṇa*.

“ The illumination of objects as being present, really exists inside but is made to appear outside ” (*Īśvarapratyabhijñā Sūtras*, V i). “ The Lord, of the form of Chit, (individual), being under the influence of desire, causes the totality of objects to shine as if existing outside, (though) without a substratum, like a Yogī.” (*Ib.* V. 6). “ The (part of the) cognition (*Adhyavaśā*), ‘ this is a pot,’ that transcends name and form, the Śakti of Pareśa, is like the Ātmā and does not shine by objectivity (*Idam tā*), ”* (*Ib.* V. 17). The theory of perception that underlies this the metaphysical position will be discussed in the Chapter on Psychology.

The active śakti of the other schools is a relatively unimportant person in this school. “ She is Mātrikā, the basis of knowledge ” (*Śiva Sū.* i. 4). Mātrikā is the alphabet, treated as the mother of the universe, who associates human

* This word ‘ idam tā ’ can be compared with ‘ haecceitas ’ of Duns Scotus.

experiences with the words that describe them and whose body is formed by the mantras which are themselves made up of letters. She is thus but the power behind mantras. Of the three śaktis, jñāna, kriyā, and ichchhā, the first two are attached in this school direct to the ātmā, so that the mother of the universe loses her predominance. *Siva Sūtras*, i. 13. says "Ichchhā śakti is U mā, the girl." As Kshemarāja explains, in the case of the Yogī who has attained the highest state, his desire is invincible and the power of his desire is the virgin U mā.

Thus, from more than one side, the metaphysical position of the Pratyabhijñā school approximates to that of Śaṅkara. As the Pratyabhijñā is professedly based on the Śāktā and Śaiva Āgamas, it raises a presumption that Śaṅkara and his Prāchārya, Gauḍapāda *, must have derived their philosophy from the Āgama schools. According to tradition both were Śāktas. Śakti worship is the chief one followed in the Advaita Muṭts which are presided over by those who claim today to be the pontifical successors of Śaṅkara. Gauḍapāda is believed to have been author of *Subhagodaya* and Śaṅkara of *Saundarya-*

* It is noteworthy that Gauḍapāda is scarcely a proper name ; it is a descriptive epithet, the reverend G a u ḍ a .

† Even in Kālidāsa's time the Āgamas were so prevalent that he complains of their manifoldness. V. *Raghuraṃṣa*. X, 26.

lahari, both poems in praise of Śakti. They practised the Śrīvidyā—the famous Śāktā discipline. So it may well be that the source of the *advaita*, like the source of all other modern Hindu sects, has to be sought for in the Śāktā Āgamas. Till the Āgama literature is edited, published and translated, the history of the development of the Hindu religion during the last 2,000 years cannot be written. Buhler records a Kāshmiri tradition that Śaṅkara was vanquished in argument by Abhinavagupta who lived three centuries later. No conclusion can be based on vague legends carried down the stream of uncritical tradition.

iii THE VAISHṆAVA ĀGAMA.

The Vaishṇava Āgamas are said to be 108 in number, very few of which have been printed. They seem to be developments of the Bhāgavata, the Pāñcharātra and the Sāttvata schools which are mentioned in the *Mahābhārata*. The differentiation into schools seems to have originally depended on the specific mantra, which was the shibboleth of each school. Thus it appears that the Bhāgavatas adopted the 12-lettered Mantra, the Pāñcharātras, the eight-lettered one (Om namo nārāyaṇāya). The Bhāgavatas are, at present, an insignificant community scattered in the

Telugu* and Maharatta country and have, so far as could be ascertained, forgotten the fact of the importance of their cult in the history of religion in India, their fundamental ideas and practices having been adopted by the Rāmānujīyas and Mādhvas and the later schools of Bhakti. Rāmānuja treats Bhāgavata, Pāñcharātra, and Sāttvata practically as synonymous terms in his *Bhāshya* on *Vedānta Sūtras*, II. ii. 40-43, perhaps because their doctrines were similar, while their mantras differed. The 108 Āgamas already referred to are all called Pāñcharātra Āgamas.

The *Pādma Samhitā* gives their names; but judging from the contents, some of them e. g. *Bhāradvāja*, are quite modern and hence very much later than the *Pādma Samhitā* itself. This raises the presumption that some of these were lost and new ones written up to take the place of the lost ones. Indeed Vedānta Deśika, writing in the XIV century says that in his time many of them could not be found. Moreover as they were kept secret there was plenty of room for forgery. But the *Pādma Samhitā* and *Lakshmi tantra* are decidedly very old. Their tenets are much nearer the Śākta and Śaiva teachings than the post-Rāmānujīya Vaiṣṇava doctrines discussed later on in this section.

* Where they are called Karaṇakamma.

The word *Pāñcharātra* is explained in *Pādma Saṃhitā* (I. i. 73) to be that which turns the other five Śāstras into night (rātri) these other Śāstras being the Śaiva, Yoga, Śāṅkhyayoga, Buddha and Ārhatta promulgated respectively by Siva, Brahma, Kapila, Buddha and Arhatta. This derivation is, on the face of it, fanciful. The *Pādma Saṃhitā* also speaks of four schools of *Pāñcharātra* (1) *Mantra Siddhānta*, accepting one Form (of God), (*Ekamūrti*) (2) *Āgama Siddhānta*, accepting four Forms, (3) *Tantra Siddhānta*, accepting nine Forms, and (4) *Tantrāntara Siddhānta*, accepting a four-headed or three-headed Form. (*Ib.* I. i. 80-83). Of these four schools, the *Pādma Saṃhitā* claims to belong to the *Tantra Siddhānta*. The fundamental doctrines of the earlier schools of the *Vaiṣṇava Āgamas* are explained in the following quotations.

“*Brāhma* is characterized by bliss (*ānanda*); (he is) the beginning, changeless, always undifferentiated, self-knowing, faultless, superlatively subtle, self-determined, the ruler, self-luminous, spotless, infinite, indestructible, tranquil, invisible, capable of evolving (the world), unchangeable, one full of consciousness of bliss (*Chidānanda*), the essence of consciousness (*chidrūpa*), omnipresent, supreme, devoid of past and future, the

Lord called V ā s u d e v a, the source of all beings, Î ṣ v a r a, the Supreme P u r u s h a, of a stainless nature, eternal, without waves, without disturbance, boundless, beyond the g u ṇ a s, with g u ṇ a s, * the giver of all desires. (I. v. 29-34). †

"His form has been described to be threefold, gross, subtle, and supreme. The gross is called S a k a l a (divided); the subtle, S a k a l a - n i s h k a l a; the supreme (form) of Him is N i s h k a l a (undivided), O, lotus-born. The thousand-headed § and other forms are the s a k a l a form of the P a r a m â t m â; the form which has feet etc. and is made of light is s a k a l a - n i s h k a l a; the first form of S a c h - c h i d â n a n d a ‡ is called N i s h k a l a." (Ib. I. vi.

* He transcends the three g u ṇ a s of matter but is the possessor of six g u ṇ a s explained *infra*.

† This passage and the succeeding verses not quoted here show a striking resemblance in ideas and phraseology to the description of P a r a m B r a h m a in *Bhagavadgîta* Chap. xiii, showing that both are derived from the same original Â g a m a source.

§ Described in the *Purusha Sûkta*.

‡ It is noteworthy that the word s a c h c h i d â n a n d a, so frequently used in the post-Śaṅkara advaita schools as the description of P a r a m B r a h m a occurs in this Â g a m a text and, so far as I have been able to search, not found in the *Śaṅkara Bhāṣya* on Bāḍrayaṇa's Sûtras. This shows that advaita, like viśiṣṭādvaita, derived a fresh accession of doctrines and ideas from the Â g a m a s, after it passed from the founder to the later teachers. Among the Upanishads, this expression first occurs in the *Nṛisimha Tāpanī* and *Rāma Tāpanī*, which are, apparently earlier than the time of Vidyāraṇya and later than that of Rāmānuja.

30-40). The *Paramâtmâ* has two natures, *Prakṛiti* and *Vikṛiti*. *Prakṛiti* is the synthesis of *Sattva* and other *guṇas*; *Vikṛiti* is *Purusha*, called *Paramâtmâ*. She (*Prakṛiti*), the woman who has the three *guṇas* as her essence, in whom the individual beings (*chetana*) are established creates the whole world. By His command she sustains it all." (*Ib.* I. vi. 41-43).

In the *Lakshmîtantra*, *Lakshmî* describes her Lord and herself in clear terms. "*Paramâtmâ* is characterized by absence of pain (*nirduḥka*) and enjoyment of boundless bliss ... They call Him the Path, the end of the Path, *Paramâtmâ*. That which is understood by the word ego is called the *Âtmâ*. The ego whose nature is unlimited is called *Paramâtmâ*. That is called ego, *Paramâtmâ*, the eternal, by whom all this, moving and motionless, is embraced. He is *Vāsudeva*, the Blessed, considered the supreme *Kshetrajña*. He is called *Vishṇu*, *Nārāyaṇa*, *Viṣva* (The All), *Viṣvarûpa*, (having the Universe as His form). All this world is enveloped by His *Ahantâ* (egoity). Truly that is not, which is not enveloped by *Ahantâ*. He is everywhere tranquil (*śânta*), changeless (*nirvikâra*), eternal, Infinite, devoid of limitations of space, time, etc. He is called *Mahāvibhûti* (Infinite Glory), because he extends infinitely. He is *Brahma*, the Supreme abode, the Light

without a substratum ; of six qualities* similar to the ocean of immortality (a m ṛ i t a), waveless, shining. He is one, undifferentiated consciousness (c h i d g h a n a), tranquil, free from rising or setting. He is called B r a h m a, the secondless, being possessed of ś a k t i, which is not different from Him." (*Lakṣmītantra*, II. 1-10).

"The Blessed one, V ā s u d e v a, of the nature of consciousness, not limited by space, time, etc., is P a r a m B r a h m a, devoid of (the three)g u ṇ a s, spotless, blissful, always the same, with the six g u ṇ a s, without old age or death. I am His supreme Ś a k t i, A h a n t ā, eternal, unchanging. My activity is of the nature of desire to create. I create of my own independent power, by means of a myriad myriadth part of a myriad myriadth part (of myself). I become two kinds of beings—the knower and the known, (c h e t y a m, and c h e t a n ī), c h i t-ś a k t i being the enlightener of both. S a m v i t, that is my nature, attains the states of the knower and the known. My nature of S a m v i t is pure, independent, full. Like the juice of the sugarcane, it attains solidity by Y o g a. Hence the said knower (c h e t y a) attains c h i t-t v a (the state of an individual jīva). As firewood,

* The six G u ṇ a s, to be carefully distinguished from the three G u ṇ a s of matter, are Jñāna, Bala, Aiśvarya, Vīrya, Śakti and Tejas or Ojas and will be presently discussed.

embraced by fire, becomes fiery (*tanmāya*), so *chetāya*, embraced by *samvit* becomes *chinmāya* (filled with the light of consciousness). The nature of *chit* is undifferentiated as blue or yellow, pleasure or pain. It is differentiated by changes due to manifold *upādhis*. Of its own power, a huge form (the manifested world) is built out of (a) small (one). The *chidrūpa* that is differentiated into subject and object is spotless, supreme, neither objective nor subjective." (*Ib.* xiv. 1—10.)

In another passage, *Lakṣmī* clearly describes the relations of the three categories, *Paramātmā*, *Śakti*, and *Jīva*. "He is the *Ātmā* of all beings, their ego, called *Harī*; I am the *Ahantā* (egoity) of all beings, the eternal. By whatever *bhāva* (form) *Vāsudeva*, the eternal, is imagined (*bhāvatah*), that *bhāva* I am called. Thence, *Brahma* the eternal goal, is of the nature of *Bhāvāt bhāva*. *Bhāvāt* is the God *Nārāyaṇa*; I, the supreme *Lakṣmī*, am *Bhāva*. Hence *Brahma*, the eternal, is called *Lakṣmīnārāyaṇa*.* Only when enveloped by *Ahantā* is it possible to cognize 'ego'; what is cognized as 'I' is *Ahantā*. Know that the connection, the identity of nature (*tādātmāya*)

* These lines are a little obscure. The relation between *Viṣṇu* and *Lakṣmī* is that between noumenon and phenomenon or abstract and concrete, corresponding to the *Prakāśa* and *Vimarśa* of the *Śākta* schools.

between me and my Lord is due to Avinābhāva (unbroken association) and Samanvaya (immediate connection). Without Ahantā 'Ego' becomes indescribable and uncognizable. Ahantā without the cognition of 'Ego' is baseless (nirādhāra), and uncognizable. The Bhavatbhāva perceptible as Samastha (synthesis) and Vyastha (analysis) is conceived in the world as paroksha and aparoksha, that which can be (objectively) realized or not. When Brahma is not awake, she, Ahantā, Parameśvarī is not awake, and remains with all the world taken into her lap. What is called his waking (unmesha), like moonrise on the ocean, that is I, Nārāyaṇī Śakti, of the nature of desire to create (Sisṛikshā). What is called the winking (nimesha) of the Paramātmā, during annihilation, that am I, Nārāyaṇī Śakti known as sushuptā, desirous of sleeping. Aiśvarya, indestructible, unlimited, develops in me, the Sisṛikshā, who rise from God, the Lord of Lakshmī. That Supreme Brahma is consciousness (Jñāna), all-seer, faultless. Ahantā is, of the nature of consciousness (jñānātmikā), all knower, all-seer. The supreme form of both of us, Brahma and me, is of the nature of consciousness. The rest, Aiśvarya, Vīrya, etc., are eternal qualities (dharma) of Jñāna. The inner form, Ego,

is called Jñānarūpa, the form of light like crystal...The indestructible supreme Aiśvarya of mine when I rise (out of Nārāyaṇa) is called Ichchhā (desire), in the various tattva-śāstras by the learned. Being the Prakṛiti (essence) of the world, (I am) called Śakti. My effortlessness when I create is regarded as Bala; (also) my filling all the created world is called Bala; though I am always Prakṛiti, my being devoid of change is Vīrya. Milk gives up its nature (of milk) when curd is formed out of it; such change is never (produced) in me when I become the (manifested) universe. Hence knowers of tattva (reality,) regard Vīrya as absence of change. Vīrya, (also) called Vikrama is (by some) regarded as a part of Aiśvarya. My independence of assistance in doing all works is called Tejas, the sixth Guṇa, by the knowers of tattvas. Tejas is defined by some as the power of defeating others. Some tattva-knowers regard this as (part of) Aiśvarya, These five Guṇas are regarded as flowing from (the first guṇa) Jñāna. The six guṇas, Jñāna and the rest, are my body." (Ib. II. 12-35). "Nārāyaṇa, the God, is the eternal Paramātmā, always the ocean of jñāna, bala, aiśvarya, vīrya, śakti and ojas. He is beginningless, not limited by space, time and form. I am his supreme Goddess, shin-

ing supreme with the six *g u ṇ a s*, the *ṣ a k t i* (goddess, power) that causes all effects, eternal, called *A h a n t ā*. My nature (*s v a r ū p a*) is *s a m v i t* (consciousness), Pure, Free, Full. All *j ī v a s* are established in me ; all of them are in me. I make manifest all the world, of my own free will (*s v e c h c h h a y ā*), on *Ā t m ā* as the substratum ; in me the world is reflected as birds in water. Of my own free will, independent (of extraneous help) I start manifestation, I, the author of the Five Actions.* The author of manifestation am I, called *c h i t - ṣ a k t i*. My contracted form, (i. e. the *j ī v ā t m ā*), he is Pure, Free, undifferentiated consciousness (*c h i d g h a n a*). In me does the world shine as the mountain in a mirror. Like a diamond-stone, he (the *j ī v a*) shines everywhere pure. His characteristic (*d h a r m a*) is *c h a i t a n y a*, like the stainless radiance of the Sun. By it does shine the *j ī v a*, with (the light) suitable (to him) of his own accord. The *j ī v a*, too, always does the Five Actions. His activity as in blue, yellow, etc., (differentiated objects) is called creation by the wise. (His) attachment to objects is called sustenance (*s t h i t i*). His giving up an object grasped on account of the desire to grasp a new one, is called destruction (*s a m h ṛ i t i*) by those that know the *t a t t v a ṣ ā s t r a s*. Its *v ā s a n ā* (deposits in the mind) is *t i r o b h ā v a*, its dissolution, *a n u g r a h a*.

* *S ṛ i ṣ ṭ ṭ i. s t h i t i. s a m h ṛ i t i. t i r o b h ā v a, a n u g r a h a.*

His characteristic is grasping and enjoyment always destroying (what he enjoys) like fire. The *jīva* always feeds little by little my brightness." * (*Ib.* xiii. 18-29.)

In the later *Vaiṣṇava* schools, namely the *Viṣiṣṭādvaita* and the *Dvaita Vedānta*, though to a large extent based on the *Pāñcharātra Āgamas*, *Lakṣmī*, the really active factor of the cosmos is degraded to an obscure position. One subsect regards *Lakṣmī* as a sort of intermediary in the matter of the grace that leads to *Mokṣha*; in another, she is inferior even to the *Āchārya*. The earlier *Pāñcharātra Āgamas* are utilized much more by the rival *Śaiva* school than by the modern *Vaiṣṇavas*. † In another point have the modern *Vaiṣṇava* schools gone away from the position of the *Āgamas*. The relation between the individual soul, called *Kṣhetrajña* (as in the *Bhagavadgītā*), and the *Paramātmā*, is much nearer the *Advaita* position than would be palatable to the modern *Viṣiṣṭādvaitīs* and *Dvaitīs* who regard this work as authoritative. "It is taught in the *Śruti* that the *Ātmā* of the *Para* and the *Kṣhetrajña* is one. The limitation of the *Kṣhetrajña* is known to be due

* Each act of conscious life is a manifestation of my power.

† Compare the quotations in the *Spandaprāṭīpika* with those in the *Tattvatrayam*.

to the difference of bodies, as one image is differentiated into many in many mirrors. *Kshetra* (the body) is made of the five,* (gross) elements (*bhûta*) etc.; the *jîva* is established in it; the wise *sûris*† (Gods) by their eyes of wisdom know him, the *kshetrajña*, to be the supreme, which cannot be reached by *Buddhi*, untouched, transcending the manifested, beyond the supreme, *Vishṇu*" (*Ib.* I. vi. 15-18). "As the *Akāśa* in a pot moves when the pot is moved, truly there is no difference between the *Para* and the *Jîva*" (*Ib.* I. vi.20).

The modern *Viśiṣṭādvaita* is a school of eclecticism, blending the *Rāmānujīya Vedānta* philosophy and *Āgama* cosmogony and practices. *Rāmānuja*, himself, though the *Āchārya*, *par excellence*, of this sect, and though he pleaded for the orthodoxy of the *Pāñcharātra* books, expounds only the *Vedānta* philosophy and discipline. But his followers have neglected *Rāmānuja*'s philosophy and brought into greater prominence *Āgama* doctrines and practices. The modern *Viśiṣṭādvaita* is clearly expounded in *Pillai Lokāchārya's Tattvatrayam*, a Tamil work of the age of

* (1) Gross elements (2) subtle elements (3) *jñānendriyas* (4) *Karmendriyas* (5) *antaḥkaraṇa*.

† In the *Vaiṣṇava* tradition, the *sûris* are beings who were never bound.

Sāyana. This work is much read by the **Srīvaishṇavas**, who are a fairly widespread sect in Southern India. The *Tattvatrayam* is an exposition of the three ultimates—**Īṣvara**, **Chit** and **Achit**. "**Chit** is **Ātmā**. The nature of **Ātmā** is (being) other than body, sense-organ, **Manas**, **Prāṇa**, **Buddhi** which are each superior to the one preceding it; (**Ātmā** is) not-unconscious, blissful, eternal, infinitely small, imperceptible, inconceivable, indivisible, immutable, the seat of knowledge; (He is) inspired, supported and disposable by **Īṣvara** (*Tattvatrayam*. i-3-4). "His size is but atomic (minute); his characteristic is the union of knowledge and bliss; of the dimensions of a **trasaṇu** (mote) and shining with millions of rays" (*Vishvaksena Saṃhitā* quot. in Maṇavāla's comment. on *Ib.* i 14). Whereas **chit** is a **ṇu**, **Īṣvara** is **Vibhu**, infinite and this constitutes an eternal difference between the two. The individual Soul resides in the heart. "He is a knower and hence an agent and an enjoyer" (*Ib.* i. 29) "**Chit** is the seat of knowledge. If he were knowledge merely, we should say 'I am knowledge' and not 'I know'." (*Ib.* i. 27, 28) This relation between the Soul and consciousness as substratum and quality (**dharma dharmibhāva**) differentiates **Viśiṣṭādvaita** from **Sāṅkhya** and **Advaita** and approximates it to **Nyāya** and **Vaiśeṣika**. This school like the last, also

admits that the **Āt m ā** is the actor and the enjoyer, unlike the **S ā n k h y a** and the **A d v a i t a** which conceive of action and enjoyment as belonging to matter. The individual souls are of three classes, **b a d d h a**, **m u k t a**, and **n i t y a**, those who are in bondage, those who are emancipated, and those who were never bound. (*Ib. i. 42*).

“**A c h i t** is the unconscious, and the seat of **v i k ā r a** (phenomenality). It is of three kinds, **Ṣ u d d h a s a t t v a** (pure **s a t t v a**), **m i ṣ r a s a t t v a** (mixed **s a t t v a**) and **s a t t v a - ṣ ū n y a** (devoid of **s a t t v a**). **Ṣ u d d h a s a t t v a** is a rarefied state of matter, pure **S a t t v a**, without the admixture of **R a j a s** and **T a m a s**, eternal, productive of knowledge and bliss, capable of modification not by **K a r m a** but by divine will into chariots, towers, pavilions, palaces etc. (in **V a i k u n ṭ h a**), of infinite brilliance, and difficult to be measured by the eternally emancipated and by **Ī ṣ v a r a** himself. This (state of matter) is regarded by some to be unconscious and by others conscious.” (*Ib. ii. 1-6*.) Though this superlatively refined state of matter is by some regarded as conscious it is different from the individual soul and from knowledge. “**M i ṣ r a s a t t v a** is that species of **A c h i t** which is compounded of **S a t t v a**, **R a j a s** and **T a m a s**, causes the destruction of the knowledge and bliss of souls in bondage, produces false knowledge, is eternal, affords a field for **Ī ṣ v a r a**’s sport (i. e.

creation etc.,) evolves into similar and dissimilar forms by differences of place and time and is called *Prakṛiti*, *Avidyā* and *Māyā*. It is called *Prakṛiti* because it causes changes (*vikāra*); it is called *Avidyā*, because it destroys knowledge; it is called *Māyā*, because it has wonderful creative power." (*Ib.* ii. 9-10).

"*Sattva Śūnya* is Time. It is the cause of the evolution of *Prakṛiti* and material objects; itself changes as *Kālā*, *Kāshṭhā* (small periods of time), is eternal, the field of *Īśvara*'s sport and His body. The other two classes of *Achit* are (1) fit to be experienced (*Bhogyā*) by *Īśvara* and *Ātmā*, (2) means and fields of (their) enjoyment. '(Those) Fit to be experienced' (*Bhogyā*) are objects; 'means of enjoyment' are organs like eyes &c., 'fields of enjoyment' are the four places and all bodies. Of these, the first *Achit* (superfine matter) is bounded below and unbounded around and above; the middle *Achit* (ordinary matter) is bounded above but unbounded below and around. Time (the last *Achit*) is the same everywhere. Time is *Nityā* (eternal) in *Paramapada* (the supreme abode of *Īśvara*), and here (in the manifested worlds), a *nityā* (finite)." (*Ib.* 43-48). 'Eternal Time' is called *Akhaṇḍa*, unbroken into finite periods, infinite duration undifferentiated by the rate of flow of changing states of consciousness. Finite Time is *Khaṇḍa*,

consisting of periods divided as seconds, minutes etc. These two are called Time and No-Time in *Mait-Up VI*.

Îṣvāra, the third t a t t v a, “is opposed to all evil, infinite, self-illuminated, blissful, shining with hosts of auspicious qualities like Jñāna, Śakti etc. the cause of the creation, maintenance and destruction of all universes, the Refuge of the four kinds of men, ‘the afflicted, the enquiring, the solicitous and the sage’ (*Bhagvad-Gītā* vii. 16) the giver of the four kinds of fruits—virtue, objects, love and release, of a splendid form, and the Lord of Lakṣmī, Nīlā and Bhūmī.” (*Ib.* iii. i.) Lakṣmī and the other two are Goddesses manifesting the three Śaktis of knowledge, action, and inertia. The auspicious qualities referred to are wisdom, power, forbearance, mercy, love, activity, righteousness, friendship, gentleness, and accessibility. (*Ib.* iii. 10)

“His ‘splendid form’ is infinitely superior to forms (like Ānandamaya) and qualities, worthy of Him alone, eternal, one, constituted of Śuddhasattva, not obstructive of wisdom like human bodies, illuminative of His Divine nature which therein is like the gold placed in a ruby cup, the treasury of His hosts of qualities like delicacy etc, of infinite brilliancy, fit to be meditated on by Yogīs, dazzling all

beings, generative of all enjoyments and dispassion, always delightfully beheld by the eternally free beings, quenching the afflictions of all like a lotus tank, the root of all *avatâras* protecting all, the substratum of all, and ornamented by implements and ornaments." (*Ib.* iii. 40.) The 'implements and ornaments' are various symbols of the divine attributes conceived as existing in physical shapes in his Divine Form.

The fortunes of *Vishṇu*, among the gods of India, have been the most varied. In the earliest Vedic age, he was the 'highest,'* being placed in the sky and the 'last', † in the series of Gods to whom a portion of the sacrificial food was to be offered. He was the friend of *Indra* and the supporter of the world. In the age of the *Brâhmaṇas*, he became the 'sacrifice', the supreme *Puruṣa*, whom the Gods stretched on the sacrificial altar. The *Nirukta* tried to explain him away as the sun. In the early *Āgamas*, he became the *Param Brahma* and his cosmic duties were discharged by "his goddess", *Lakṣmī*. Finally in the *Purāṇas* and in the popular imagination of modern India, he is the second person of the Trinity, always sleeping stretched leisurely in his couch (of *Ādiṣeṣha* the cosmic serpent) and comforted by three wives, *Śrī*, *Bhū*, and *Nîlâ*, on the

* *R. V.* 1. 22. 20. *Āit Brâh.* I. i. 1.

† *Āṣval. Śr. Sūl.* iv. 2.

ocean of milk which extends through all space and interfering with the affairs of the world as an *avâtâra*, only when his help is invoked by his colleague and son, *Brahmâ*. The *Śālagrāma* a fossil ammonite shell of Tertiary times is his favorite haunt and is treasured in the homes of his devotees and the modern *Vaishṇava* sips the water in which the fossil ammonite is washed to the chanting of the *Purusha sūktā*,* for disinfecting his inside of the bacillus of sin !

* The *Purusha Sūktā* and the *Gâyatrî*, which every orthodox Hindu recites daily in his worship were also used in ancient times in the *Purushamedha*, when the human victim was bound and about to be immolated. *Śat. Brâh.* XIII. 6. 2. 9, 2.

The following chronological note has been furnished by Mr. Gopinatha Row.

That side of the *Vishṇu*-cult which concerned itself with temple worship became popular in Southern India in the age of the 12 *Ālvârs*, *Vaishṇava* saints [of assorted castes] who lived between the 6th and 9th cent. A. D. and produced Tamil literature collected as the four thousand verses (*Nālāyira prabandham*) and fixed as the sacred Tamil *Vaishṇava* canon by *Nāthamuni*, who lived in the reign of *Râjarâja I* and the earlier *Râjendra-Choladeva I* (985-1030 A. D.) His grandson, *Ālavandâr*, otherwise, *Yâmunā* wrote the *Siddhī-trayam*, the first exposition of the fundamental ideas of the *Viśiṣṭādvaita Vedânta*, as well as *Āgamaprāmāṇyam* and thus paved the way for the amalgamation of the *Vaishṇava Āgama* and the *Vedânta* teachings.

Râmanuja lived from 1055-1137 A. D. Pârṇa-prajña, otherwise Mādhva is said to have been born in 1206 A. D. The third in descent from him was Naraharīrtha, Dewan Regent of Kalinga, (Orissa) during the minority of Vira Nârasimha Deva. His successor, Akshobhyatīrtha was a contemporary of Vidyâranya, like the two well-known expounders of Râmanuja, Vedânta Deśika and Pillai Lokâchârya. Akshobhya's disciple, Jayatīrtha is the greatest among the expounders of the Mādhva cult. From Akshobhya there arose a branch, the first member of which was Kṛṣṇa Chaitanya, the prophet of Bengal. Vallabha, the founder of the Kṛṣṇa-Bhakti cult, a Telugu Brahman of the Nellore District, was a contemporary of Kṛṣṇa Devarâya of the Vijayanagaram dynasty (1500-1527 A. D.) and a contemporary of a late Mādhva teacher, Vyâsatīrtha.

The Śaiva temple-cult spread among the Tamils more extensively than the corresponding Viṣṇu-cult and gave birth to a more extensive Tamil literature. The Tamil Śaiva saints, Śivanaḍiyârs, were 63 in number. The greatest of them was Tiruṇana Sambandha, who converted the powerful Pāṇḍya King, Kūṇ Pāṇḍya from the Jaina to the Saiva cult. Śankarâcharya, who lived in the later half of the 8th. century refers to Sambandha as Draviḍa Śiṣu (*Saundaryalaharī*, sl. 75). Hence Sambandha and his very militant friend, Appar, (or Vâḡiṣar) who conducted a vigorous crusade against the Jaina religion must have lived and worked about 650 A. D. Another famous Saiva teacher, Sundaramūrti lived about 850 A. D. He was a protege of Narasinga Munaiyaraiyan of Naḍu Nāḍu (in the South Arcot Dt.). The Tamil songs of these a Śiva Saints are called *Tevḍram*. About 100 years later lived Mânikka vâṣagar, author of *Tiruvāṣagam*, edited and translated

by Dr. G. U. Pope. Nīlakanṭha wrote a Bhāṣhya of the Vedāntasūtra to suit the tenets of the Śaiva Siddhānta, and it is called Śaiva Viśiṣṭādvaita Bhāṣhya. Meikapṭa, (1236 A. D.) and Umāpati Śivāchārya, (1313 A. D.) wrote voluminous Tamil works expounding the same.

The following note has been furnished by my friend Mr V. Venkayya, Govt. Epigraphist, Ootacamund.

The Nānaghāta inscription begins with invocations to Indra Saṅkarṣana, Vāsudeva, Yama, Varuna and Kubera.

The worship of Bhagavat Sankarshana and Vāsudeva and a Vaishnava temple are mentioned in a still earlier inscription. *Ind. Ant.* Vol XVIII p. 190.

That the worship of Śiva is more ancient than the time of the founder of Buddhism is rendered probable by the tradition that the Śākyaas were worshippers of Śiva. The Chinese pilgrim Hienue Tsang was shown near the eastern gate of Kapilavastu the old temple of Īṣvara, where the infant Siddhārtha was taken by his father, because "the Śākya children who here seek divine protection always obtain what they ask." According to the legend the stone image then raised itself and saluted the prince. That this legend is very ancient is proved by the fact that the scene is represented on the Amarāvati sūpa (*Ep. Ind.* V, 3.) which has probably to be assigned to the Maurya Period.

Section IV.

The Vaiṣeṣhika and the Nyāya.

These schools were based on the logical processes of Definition and Deduction. They were uncompromisingly anti-monistic in their aim. Even the Sāṅkhya, while admitting each Puruṣha to exist absolutely apart from other conscious beings, conceives all unconscious substances from Buddhi downwards to be successive transformations of one substratum—matter, but these schools do not attempt to derive one kind of substance from another. They divide objects into genera and species, define them by these marks, but refuse to be attracted by the eternal mocking mirage of monism that has produced so much bad metaphysics and worse science even in our days. The earliest Vaiṣeṣhika book we have is the Sūtras of Kaṇāda, and the earliest Nyāya book, the Sūtras of Gautama and these are not much later than the age of Buddha, while the Vaiṣeṣhika-Nyāya system, the ancient rival of the Sāṅkhya-Yoga system, and also of the Vedānta system, must be older. Praśastapāda, who lived not much later than the 1st century A. D. wrote a *Bhāṣya* on the Sūtras of Kaṇāda. This *Bhāṣya* is not a commentary but a systematic restatement and amplification of the Vaiṣeṣhika system, utilizing where

possible the words of Kaṇāda. Vātsyāyana, was the first commentator on the *Nyāya Sūtras* and he lived sometime before the 6th cent. A. D. In later days the Vaiśeṣhika and Nyāya schools got very much mixed up, so that in modern works on Tarka (Logic) so-called, the part contributed by the Vaiśeṣhika school could scarcely be disentangled from that contributed by the Nyāya school. Similarly the Sāṅkhya and Yoga are one and the Vedānta and Āgama have in modern times become inextricably one, making it extremely difficult to discover the historical development of each philosophical idea.

A. *Vaiśeṣhika*.

The Vaiśeṣhika school analyses padārthas into six. Padārtha literally means the meaning of a word, the thing which corresponds to a word and is generally translated category. It is more properly, a fundamental general concept under which can be subsumed what are indicated by words. These are six according to the early Vaiśeṣhika—substance (Dravya), quality (Guṇa), action (Karma), Sāmānya, (the relation of a thing to its genus), Viśeṣa (differentia) and Samavāya (coinherence). (*Vaiṣ. Sūtr.* I. i. 4). Kaṇāda restricts the word

A r t h a to the first three (*Vaiṣ. Sūtr.* VIII. ii. 3) and Prāṣastapāda extended it to the others also.

In later days a seventh category, A b h ā v a (non-existence), was added to the list and the total Padārthas acknowledged to-day are thus seven.

The characteristics of substance are that it serves as a substrate of qualities and actions and is a coinherent cause. (*Ib.* I. i. 15). Qualities like colour, and actions like expansion, cannot exist *in vacuo* but require substance as their Ā d h ā r a (substrate). "A substance is not destroyed either by its effect or by its cause." (*Ib.* I. i. 12). Thus the threads are not destroyed when they become woven into cloth, but coinhere in the cloth: But "qualities (are destroyed) in both ways." (*Ib.* I. i. 12); when one taste is produced by a combination of a number of others, each of these latter loses its individuality. "An action is destroyed by its effect" (*Ib.* I. i. 14); the tension of a bow is destroyed when disjunction of the arrow from the bow is produced. The characteristics of quality are that it inheres in a substance, it is without qualities, and is not a cause of (or) is concerned with conjunctions and disjunctions."

* Bodas, in his introduction to the *Tarka Samgraha* p. 30-31 has proved that *Vaiṣ. Sūtr.* I. i. 4. is an interpolation made later than the age of Śrīdhara, the author of *Nāya Kandali* (991 A. D.).

(*Ib.* I. i. 16) "The characteristics of action are that it inheres in one substance, it is without qualities and is the sole cause of conjunctions and disjunctions" (*Ib.* I. i. 17, 30). Kaṇāda also discusses sāmānyā (nature of genus), viśeṣhā (nature of species) and samavāya, (coinherence), though he does not include them in the categories, for they are not objects (artha) of perception. "Generality and speciality are buddhyapekṣham, conceptual. (*Ib.* I. ii. 3). The *Summum Genus*, "that which is a genus (without being a species) is Bhāva (existence), for it is the most extensive concept." (*Ib.* I. ii. 4). "Substantiality (dravyatva), qualitateness (guṇatva) and activity (karmatva) are both general and specific. (And so all others) except ultimate species, (the atoms etc.)" (*Ib.* I. ii. 5-6.) In the later Vaiśeṣhika, the word viśeṣhā (difference) has been restricted to what is called here, antyaviśeṣhā, ultimate species, the detailed description of which gave the name Vaiśeṣhika to this school.

The last padārtha, according to Praśastapāda is coinherence, Samavāya. Kaṇāda defines coinherence to be "that by which (we speak) of cause and effect, that the one is in the other" (*Ib.* VII. ii. 26). Praśastapāda discusses Samavāya fully. "The connection of what are inseparably connected and are in the relation of substrate and accessory which causes the cognition

‘here’ is *S a m a v â y a*. From the cognitions, ‘Here, in the threads(is) the cloth,’ ‘Here, in the grass (is) the mat(woven from thegrass),’ ‘Here, in *D r a v y a* (are) *D r a v y a*, *G u ṇ a* and *K a r m a*,’ ‘Here in *D r a v y a*, *G u ṇ a* and *K a r m a* (is) *S a t t â*, ‘Here, in *D r a v y a* (substance) is *D r a v y a - t v a m* (substantiality),’ ‘Here in *G u ṇ a* (quality), is *g u ṇ a t v a m* (qualitativeness),’ ‘Here, in *k a r m a* (action) is *K a r m a t v a m* (activity),’ ‘Here in eternal (atoms) are the ultimate species (*a n t y a v i ṣ e ṣ h â h*),’ we can understand there is some connection between the members of these (pairs). This (connection) is not *S a m y o g a* (conjunction like that between a pot and the milk placed in it).” (*Vaiṣ. Darṣ.* Bombay Ed. p. 66)

Of these *p a d â r t h a*s, the first three, *D r a v y a*, *G u ṇ a* and *K a r m a* possess *S a t t â*. *S a t t â* is defined thus:—“Whence we say of *D r a v y a*, *G u ṇ a* and *K a r m a* that they *are*—that is *S a t t â*. *S a t t â* is an *a r t h a* (a thing) different from substance, quality and action. (*Ib* I. ii. 7-8). “Existence is one, for ‘to be’ is no specific mark (of things) nor has it specific marks of its own.” (*Ib*. I. ii. 17.) “Existence is uncaused and eternal” (*Ib*. IV. i. 1). Thus the *S a t t â* of the *Vaiṣeṣhikas* is a general concept and other than *D r a v y a*, *G u ṇ a* and *K a r m a*, and hence is not a noumenon, a reality behind phenomena, like the *P r a k ṛ i t i* of the *S â ṅ k h y a*s. *Praṣastapâda* notes that

the other three padârthas, Sâ mân ya, Vi ş e ś h a and S a m a v ā y a are characterized by Sv â t m a s a t v a, which Udayana explains as being devoid of S a t t â (*Prasastapada bhāṣya* p. 30.)

The first of these padârthas has been described as substance. The ultimate substances are uncaused and eternal. They are of two classes, aṇu and vibhu, atomic and pervasive. The idea of an atom is derived from the consideration of the divisibility, or as it is called a v a y a v o - v a y a v î p r a s a n g a, the relation of the constituent parts and the constituted whole. The divisibility of matter must end somewhere; if not, there would be no difference of size between Mount Meru and a grain of mustard, for both would be made up of an infinity of parts. Matter of the size of a t r a s a r e n u, a mote in the sunbeam, contains three d v a y a n u k a s, double atoms. Each d v a y a ṇ u k a is made up of two p a r a m ā ṇ u s atoms. Five are atomic substances, earth, water, air, fire and m a n a s. Four are pervasive substances, time, space, â k â ś a and â t m â.

Of these nine eternal, ultimate substances the most important is Â t m â, by which all other substances are cognized.

“ The objects of sense are universally known. The universal cognition of the objects of sense proves that there is a substance other than ‘(those)

objects of sense (which cognizes them). It is an invalid argument (which says that cognition is a quality of the body or the senses), because of the unconsciousness of the causes of the sensation and consciousness of the effects *i. e.* the cognition." (*Ib.* III, i. 1—5). "The (cognition in the) term 'I' being characteristically different (from every other cognition) no scriptural testimony is required" to prove the existence of the soul (*Ib.* III. ii. 9). On the contrary, "the cognition of the Ego is an immediate intuition of an entity other (than the body), because it applies to the soul that reflects on itself and nothing else" (*Ib.* III ii. 14).

This rejection of scriptural testimony for the existence of the *Âtmā* is in direct contradiction to the *Vedānta*, which admits scripture *i. e.* testimony, of either supersensuous beings or teachers (*gurus*) who have gained an experience not attained by ordinary men as the only evidence of the existence of the *Âtmā*, for *Vedānta* asserts the existence of a universal *Âtmā*, which is not given in ordinary human consciousness. That 'I am' every one will admit. That 'I am more than I am now' is the fundamental position of the *Vedānta* and this can but be a matter of faith till that greater I is actually experienced. The *Sāṅkhya* and the *Vaiṣeṣika* which are essentially rationalistic cannot help being schools of individualism.

The soul is " manifold, because of the distinctness " of one man's experiences from every other (man's) (*Ib* III. ii. 21). Moreover " the activity and inactivity observed in one's own soul are marks (to prove the existence of different souls) in others." (*Ib* III. i. 19). As Śaṅkara Miśra, a commentator on the S ū t r a s says, " Activity and inactivity produced by desire and aversion are (two) species of effort. From them are born bodily functions called muscular actions having for their object the attainment of pleasure and avoidance of pain. Hence, when we see muscular action in a body other (than our own), we infer (the existence of) another soul for this muscular action is born from effort, because it is a muscular action like our own muscular action and that effort is born from some soul or based on some soul because it is an effort like our own effort."

"The marks of the (presence of the) soul (in a body) are the outgoing and in going breath, the opening and closing of the eyes, vitality (that builds up tissue), the motion of m a n a s, affection of the other sense-organs, pleasure, pain, desire, aversion and volitional effort." (*Ib*. III. ii-4).

The play of breath in a body is the result of a constant effort of the soul to keep up the life of the body exerted as much during sleep as during waking moments. This is called 'the conation that is the basis of vitality (jīva n a y o n i p r a -

y a t n a); winking and the anabolic processes are also due to the same conation. The movements of m a n a s in bringing the Â t m â and the organs of sense into conjunction to produce perception depend upon desire and effort both of which reside in the Â t m â. Pleasure and pain reside in the Â t m â which is their substratum. Thus the Â t m â of the V a i ṣ e ṣ h i k a s comes nearest to the Western conception of the soul. As in European philosophy, desires, conations and preceptions are conceived as qualities of the soul, and not as processes of subtle forms of matter, the object ; but the V a i ṣ e ṣ h i k a school clearly separates consciousness from these, which it does not regard as modifications of consciousness as is held in the West. Consciousness is separate from them and can and does exist apart from them.

Time is another ultimate substance. The marks of its existence are "the notions of later, simultaneous, slow and quick." (*Vaiṣ. Sūtr.* II. ii. 6). "It is called a cause as it does not exist in eternal things and exists in non-eternal things." (*Ib.* II. ii. 9) D i k, space is another substance whence (rises) the notion "this is (so far) from here." (*Ib.* II. ii. 10). Time and space are substances, because they do not inhere in any other substance and possess actions and qualities and are eternal. (*Ib.* II. ii. 7. 11). Time is one and so is Space though they appear manifold, on account of accidental quali-

ties added to them. (*Ib* II. ii. 8, 12) The division of time into minutes, hours, etc. and into past, present and future and of space into East, West, etc, are not due to their inherent qualities but to the course or position of the Sun. The conception of time as past, present or future is due to the distinction of the states of objects into antecedent non-existence, present existence and subsequent non-existence. These distinctions being transferred to Time lead to its division into past, present and future, though it is really one. Like the soul, these two substances are *vibhu*, pervasive and infinite and not *aṇu*, atomic. It must be noted here that Space is called *Dik*, which literally means, direction. It is the distance between two objects measured along a straight line. Modern *Hindūs* use *Akâṣa* for space, whereas *Akâṣa*, being the substrate of sound is a definite substance with qualities attached thereto. The idea of infinite space does not seem to be discussed in Hindu books. The *Upanishads* speak of '*Âkâṣam Brahma*'; this can but be the manifestation of *Brahma* as 'subtle sound', not mere infinity of extension, devoid of any extended thing, which is the modern conception of infinite space.

Manas is another eternal substance. It is the organ that brings into contact the soul and the objects of sense through the sense-organs. "The proof (of the existence) of *Manas* are

existence and non-existence of cognition on the proximity of the soul and sense-objects (according as *Mānasa* serves as their medium of contact or no). (*Ib.* III. ii. 1). It is atomic (indivisible and invisible) because it can be in contact with only one sense-organ at a time whereas if it were all-pervading it could be in contact with all sense-organs and we could have a number of sensations at the same time. As we cannot imagine it to be constituted by constituted parts it follows that it is eternal. It is an ultimate substance because on it as substratum takes place the conjunction with sense-organs to produce cognitions.

In the substances are 'Earth', 'Water', 'Fire', 'Air' and *Ākāśa*. Of these the first four are *aṇu*, atomic and the last is *vibhu*, pervasive. The sensation of sound is a quality which inheres in *Ākāśa*. The sensation of touch inheres in the atoms of 'air.' 'Fire' has two qualities, colour and touch. 'Water' has three qualities, colour, taste and touch. 'Earth' has four, colour, taste, smell and touch. Thus these four represent four hypothetical elementary substances, which combine and produce the perishable objects of the universe. The latter are *kārya* or effects which derive their qualities on account of the *Samavāya* or coinherence in them of their causes—the eternal substances. In the words of the *Sūtras*, "the nature of the effect (is derived) from the nature of

Even in this early age, the sentences of the hymns were dislocated from their context and used as Mantras and not understood as literature. There is a tradition referred to in the *Vishṇu Purāṇa* (III. iv. ii.), that at first the Veda was one and called the Yajurveda and Vyāsa* separated it into four, each part being a collection of the mantras to be recited by one class of priests officiating at the sacrifices. The Adhvaryu was the actual performer of the sacrifices and for his use was compiled the *Yajurveda* which contains the Mantras (poetical or Rik and prose or Yajus), with which he was to accompany each detail of the ceremonies from the simple Darśapūrṇamāsa ishṭi (new and full moon sacrifices) to the highly complicated Aśvamedha and Purushamedha (Horse-sacrifice and human sacrifice). The *Yajurveda* is the most complicated, because it is the Veda of the Adhvaryu who performs the actual work of the sacrifice and hence it follows closely the order of the various ceremonies. We can

* Dattātreyā is also said to have done the same work perhaps in another age. *Māgha* xiv. 79.

† Probably the first *Yajurveda* referred to in the *Vishṇu Purāṇa* contained the Mantras of the other priests till Vyāsa compiled separate manuals for the different classes of priests. Even now the *luck Yajur Veda* is a confused mass of *Samhita* and *Brāhmaṇa*, which Yājñavalkya separated into the *Vajasaneya Samhita* and *Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa* which together form the *White Yajur Veda*.

therefore understand why it was the first to be compiled. The *Hotā* invited the Gods to the sacrifice and praised them by reciting hymns. In a sense he represented the ancient *Ṛishis* who composed the hymns, for his function was to invoke the Gods by praise. His recitations were long and not generally correlated to definite acts as in the case of the *Adhvaryu*. Hence in the *Veda* compiled for him was included many of the original hymns in the form in which they were composed, *i. e.* without detaching individual verses from their context. Hence it happens that the *Rig-Veda* contains so many connected compositions—a fact which has led some European scholars to think that it was compiled earlier than the *Yajur-Veda* while others go so far as to regard it as a ‘historical’ work. The *Udgātā* was the singer of select hymns during the sacrifices and for his benefit the *Sāma-Veda* was compiled. Thus was constituted the *Trayīvidyā*, which contained what may be called the national or rather tribal religious ceremonial of the ancient Hindus. The domestic ceremonial, which affected home life and embodied the wishes and aspirations of the ordinary folk, was in the earliest times the office of the *Ātharvāṇa*, the family ‘medicine-man’ and the hymns used by him were collected in his *Veda*. Even the *Ṛig Veda*, as it is, contains bits absolutely like the *Ātharva Veda*

as when *R. V. VIII.* 91-5 refers to the desire of a maiden for a peculiar hirsute decoration and the necessary ritual to secure that growth. Later on, when the increasing complexity of the sacrificial ritual required a supreme director of ceremonies called *Brahmā* and a distinct house ritual, called *Gṛihya*, * nominally based on the *Trayī* (the three *Vedas*) was evolved, the *Atharva Veda* was technically associated with the *Brahmā* and actually fell into comparative oblivion. From the earliest times the *Trayī-vidyā*, the imposing ritual of the sacrifices loomed large in the imagination of the Hindus and from the frequent references to it and its constant glorification in the early literature, have resulted two misconceptions (1) that the *Atharva Veda* is later than the others, (2) that it deals with black magic and is somewhat disreputable. The *Atharva Veda* contains a great number of *Sūktas* also found in the *Ṛig Veda*; but

* The elaborate series of house rites, from *Garbhādhānam* to *Sapinḍikaraṇam*, which are the chief relics of Vedic ceremonies still fairly common among the 'twice-born' form the so-called *Smārta Karma*, while the *Yajñas* are the *Śrauta*, though the *Mantras* accompanying both belong to the same age. The *Mantras* of the former, collected in groups called *Mantrapāṭha* or *Mantrapraśna* were floating hymns from ancient times and, of course, never formed part of the *Trayī* which was compiled for purposes of *Yajña*, and are hence generally regarded as *Khila*, fragments of a supposed lost canon.

this does not mean that the former borrowed from the latter. They were compiled for different purposes and tapped the same original source. Just because it was at least as old and as sacred as the rest that it was assigned to the *Brahmā* when that office was invented. The magic of the *Yajur-Veda* is as primitive as that of the others. The *Adhvaryu* regards everything he touches or uses, stones, grass, fire, as a fetish and flatters the spirit behind it so that he may not harm him, just as the *Atharvaṇa* charms neuralgia away from a man by praising the spirit that causes it. The following extract from the *Āpastamba Śrauta Sūtras* with the mantras referred to there proves the magic of the Vedic *Yajñas* to be as crude as any other magic.

“ Having heated the *Sānnāyā* vessels on the *Gārhapatya* fire with the invocation, ‘ may the *Rākshasas* be burned, may those intent on mischief be burned,’ taken the *Upavēsha* with ‘ you are bold, give me the *Brahmā* ’ (*Tait. Sam* ; I. i-7), taken out from the north side of the *Gārhapatya* fire a live coal with ‘ May quarrel and fear be removed, may the army that comes (against us) be removed,’ he (the *Adhvaryu*) places the pot on it (the live coal) with ‘ Thou art the milk-kettle of *Mātarīṣvā*, thou art Heaven, thou art Earth, thou art the bearer of all, be firm (in your place on the coal), by (your) transcendent

power ; do not fall down, (*Ib.* I. i. 3). Or (he places the pot on the coal) with, 'O, two cooking pots. I place (you) on (the fire) for avoiding the miscarriage of the Yajña. May (you) hold for Indra's sake the boiled (milk), yielded by the cows, and the curd, (*Tait. Brāh. III. vii. 4. 34.*) Having placed fire round the pot, from right to left with 'Become heated by the tapas of Bhṛigu and Aṅgiras' (*Tait. Sam. I. i. 7*), he places the Śākḥāpavitra in it (the pot) with the tips to the East with 'you are the pavitra of the Vasus hundredfold, you are the pavitra of the Vasus, thousandfold, (*Tait. Sam. I. i. 3*). He places the Śākḥāpavitra (with the tips) to the North in the morning. Having grasped the pot from behind, he is silent. Or he is (so), holding the pavitra. [Having thus made the pot ready for boiling the milk, he proceeds to milk the cow.] He grasps the ropes (for tying the calf, before milking), with 'Thou art the rope of Aditi.' The Yajamaṇa consecrates (the rope) which is being grasped with, 'Thou art of thirty-three threads. Come with holiness. May this rope for tying the calf serve the calf well (not hurt it).' (*Tait. Brāh. III. vii. 4. 33*). He (the Adhvaryu) ties the calf (to a post) with 'Thou art Pūshā, (*Tait. Brāh. III. vii. 4. 39*). He invites (the milker) with 'Tell me (when the calf has been) taken (to its) mother.' (The milker) calls (the Adhvaryu)

with 'I take (the calf to its mother).' He takes the calf with 'I take (O cows, your) calves to you who are without disease and are the increase of wealth' (*Tait. Brah.* III. vii. 4. 40.) The *Adhvaryu* commands, 'Do not walk between the cows to whom the calves have been taken and the *Vihâra* (the place of the three sacred fires).' If (any one, goes between the (calves) taken (to the cows) and the *Vihâra*, he shall say. 'Do not carry off the *Sânnâyaya*.' (The milker) says 'sit.' The milker sits with, 'I admit calves to you, who are without disease and are the increase of wealth. I, who live, sit near you who are living, who are overflowing with strength-giving milk and *ghî*' (*Tait. Brâh.* III vii. 4. 40). A *ṣûdra* shall not milk or shall milk. He milks into a wooden pot. The *Yajamâna* accompanies the admitted (calf), the milked (cow), the sound of the streaming (milk) with, 'I admit calves to you, who are without disease and are the increase of wealth, 'May *Dyâvâprithvî* milk for this *yajña*. May *Dhâtâ*, *Soma*, *Vâyu* and *Vâta*, may they give wealth to the *Yajamâna* (*Tait. Brâh.* III. vii. 4. 41)." Except that the magic* here is more complicated than in the *Atharva veda*, there is nothing to distinguish it

* Well does this explain Krishna's stinging description of the followers of the veda as '*avipascita*,' uninspired (*Bh. Gita.* ii. 42). Milking a cow and placing a pot on fire required so much adulation of the Gods and abject fear of them!

from the latter. The four *Samhitās* suffixed the needs of a fairly long period of time.

After this period there must have occurred a break of culture, long enough to allow of the language of the *Samhitā* to become obscure to a later generation. The language changed during this period to that of the *Bṛāhmanas*, which is midway between Vedic and classical Sanskrit. The meanings of the hymns having become obscure, they began to be applied indiscriminately for sacrificial purposes and interpreted in fanciful ways. Discussions frequently arose in the assemblies of the priests about details of the rituals, applications of mantras, etc. To settle such questions, what were called *Nyāyas* were frequently utilized. The *Nyāyas* are analogies, or inferences or proverbs which make statements probable or acceptable and are even now largely used for purposes of argumentation. The *Ahikundala Nyāya* (the analogy of the snake and its coils being one and yet more than one), *Sthālīpulaka Nyāya* (judging of the state of rice in the cooking-pot by examining one grain) are illustrations of the humble beginnings of Logic. Such *Nyāyas* form the backbone of all *bhāshyas* of all the modern sects. Decisions on considerations like these and cruder ones too are

* Ool Jacob has published a collection of them under the name *Laukika nyayāñjali*.

scattered throughout the *Brâhmaṇas*, which contain besides, traditions, real or imaginary, regarding the composition of particular mantras, cosmogonic speculations, etc.

In time the *Brâhmaṇas*, too were added to the holy canon and became fixed as a part of the revealed *Veda*. With the extension of the Scripture to include "the *Mantra* and *Brâhmaṇa*," the task of the exegete became more difficult and complicated. The work of explaining the various discrepancies of the *Veda* and solving the various difficulties of the ritual became a profession and the scheme of *Nyâyas** was developed into the *Mīmāṃsâ Śāstra*. A collection of such is the *Sûtras* of Jaimini. On them Upavarsha is said to have commented and Sabara wrote his *Bhâshya*. Jaimini is referred to and his opinions controverted by Bâdarâyaṇa in his *Brahma Mīmāṃsa Sûtras* and could not have lived very much later than the 6th century B. C. when Vedic sacrifices were so rampant as to evoke the Buddhist reaction headed by Gautama Siddhârtha.

The object of Jaimini's *Sûtras* is to expound *Dharma*. "Now, then, the investigation of *Dharma* (duty). *Dharma* has for its purpose

* *Mīmāṃsâ*, both *Pûrva* and *Uttara* is still called *Nyâya*. *Mâdhava* speaks of *Jaiminiya Nyâyamâla* and *Vaiyâsika Nyâyamâla*. The *Nyâya* of Gotama is a development of the same humble and popular *Nyâyas* but on rationalistic lines.

what follows from a scriptural injunction. Now (commences) the examination of its origin. When there is a connection between Purusha and Indriyas, Buddhi* (perception) is produced. Such perception is not the origin (of duty), for it deals with what exists (at the time of perception while duty does not then exist)". (*Pār. Mim. Sūtr.* I. i. 1-4)

Thus according to Jaimini, the sanction of Law must be from what transcends perception, human or superhuman. Even the highest Purusha is limited by his organs of perception and is hence incompetent to prescribe duty with authority. The authoritativeness of the Vedic injunctions is derived from the fact that they deal with objects beyond the reach of experience of man or of the Devas. Hence there is no room for an Îśvara in the Mîmâṃsâ system. The Karma Kāṇḍa of the Vedas, *i. e.*, the Vedas *minus* the Upanishads had not worked out except vaguely and that in the latest passages the idea of Brahma being the noumenon of the universe. Even the doctrine of the Âtmâ, man's continued existence apart from those he lives in the various bodies he inhabits seemed to have been an open question for a very long time as is proved by Nachiketas' second question to Yama about the continuity

* Buddhi, intellection, is a function and not an organ according to Mîmâṃsakas and Naiyâyikas.

of man's postmortem life with that before death and by Yama's remark that the Gods themselves were in doubt (*Kath. Up.* i. 20-22). The question was, in Gautama Buddha's time, still so fluid that he could ignore it while preaching his special discipline. Similarly the original *mîmâṃsâ* let these questions severely alone and contented itself with establishing the authority of the Veda and the binding nature of the Vedic rites. The only possible way of proving this authority without invoking the sanction of a personal being, high or low, was to argue that the Veda existed from all eternity. This could be only if the words of the Veda were uncreate, *i. e.* if the connection between a word and the object that the word names were itself eternal. The *Mîmâṃsâ Sûtras* therefore, say :—

“Because the connection of sound and sense is unborn. Hence it conveys unerring knowledge with regard to matters which cannot be reached (by perception and inference). This is the authority accepted by *Bâdarāyaṇa*, because it requires no further proof.” (*Ib.* I, i. 5). Like *Jaimini*, *Bâdarāyaṇa* has to rely entirely on the final authority of the Veda to prove the existence of conscious *Brahma*, as the noumenon of the universe, for this cannot be proved “by perception and inference” (*Ved. Sû.* I. i. 5). He therefore generally accepts the position of *Jaimini* that the

Vedas are eternal, though the **Devas** and the world are not so, because of the identity of names and forms before and after **Pralaya** (*Ib.* iii. 28 30).

Jaimini gives the following reasons to prove the eternity of sounds. (1) Sound is eternal because it serves to convey meaning. The object referred to by a name always rests, as it were, upon the name. (*Mīm. Sūtr.* I. i-18). (2) It is recognised by all simultaneously. How could this be possible if it were a vanishing thing? (*Ib.* I. i-19). (3) It is incommensurable. One sound repeated ten times is not ten sounds, as it would be if sound were a mutable substance. (*Ib.* I. i-20). (4) There are no grounds for expecting its destruction. (*Ib.* I. i-21). (5) (If sound were a modification of some other substance,) there would be no appropriate object to be perceived by the organ of hearing. Each sense-organ corresponds to an elementary substance in the world. Hence sound is an elementary substance and not a mere *vikāra* (mode) of another. (*Ib.* I. i-22). (6) It is seen that the *veda* also proclaims the eternity of sound (*Ib.* I. i. 23.)

The objections of the *Naiyāyikas* to the theories of the eternity of sound are summarised in *Ib.* I. i. 6-11, as follows:—

Sound is a product because (1) We see it produced. (2) It dies. (3) We use the phrase 'he makes a sound'. (4) It is perceived at once by different

persons far and near. Therefore it cannot be one and immutable. (5) It is susceptible of prakṛiti-vikṛiti. Sounds change from one to another in sandhi. Thus dadhiatra becomes dadhyatra. (6) It is augmented by the number of those that make it. These objections are met in *Sūtras* I. i. 12-17. It is admitted by both schools that the perception of sound is momentary. But the non-perception of sound which is always existent is due to the want of union of the hearer and the sound, the object of hearing. Sound exists always but becomes manifested as nāda, (noise), conjunctions and disjunctions of air, when uttered by a man. These vibrations of air serve to connect the pre-existing sound with the auditorium of the hearer. The phrase 'makes a sound' means the starting of these vibrations, which of course are transitory. The fact that many persons hear the same sound at the same time does not prove that it is not one and immutable. Herein it resembles the sun, which being one and immutable, is still seen by men remote from one another at the same time. In Sandhi one sound does not change into another, but the second sound (in the illustration) is substituted for the first. Lastly when there is an increase of sound, it is the manifesting nāda (air-vibrations) that is increased, not the original substance, Śabda.

If we remember that in Indian philosophy, mental states are modifications of matter, it is not difficult to understand this Mîmâṃsaka theory that the connection between sound and sense is eternal. A mental concept of an object being a modification of subtle matter is permanently attached to the substratum of the name of the object in the same grade of matter. An uttered name is nâda, which is a temporary manifestation of the eternal sound; this latter is a permanent modification of that Ākāśa which is also the material of the organ of thought. Hence a thought exists permanently attached to its name; in other words nâma and rūpa are one; the thought and the name rise together in consciousness. This explanation also helps us to understand why manifestation is always called nâmarūpa in Hindu books, and why Uddālaka in trying to illustrate to Śvetaketu the knowledge that makes us hear what cannot be heard and perceived what cannot be perceived says, "As, my dear, by one clod of clay all that is made of clay is known, the change is a *mere matter of words, nothing but a name* (vācchārambhaṇam vikāronāmadheyam)" (*Chând. Up.* vi. 1. 3.)

This idea of the eternity of the meaning of a word is not so ridiculously old-fashioned as some people think it is. Sir Oliver Lodge writes in *Life and Matter*, which may better be entitled, 'the metaphysics of a physicist', "The connection between

soul and body or more generally between spiritual and material, has been illustrated by the connection between the meaning of a sentence and the written or spoken word conveying that meaning. The writing or the speaking may be regarded as an incarnation of the meaning, a mode of stating or exhibiting its essence. As delivered, the sentence must have time relations ; it has a beginning, middle and end ; it may be repeated, and the same general meaning may be expressed in other words ; but the intrinsic meaning of the sentence itself need have no time relations, it may be true *always*, it may exist as an eternal " now," though it may be perceived and expressed by humanity with varying clearness from time to time." (p. 115) Max Müller remarks on this Mîmâṃsaka doctrine that the philosophers of India understood that the study of language was an integral part of philosophy.

"They had evidently perceived that language is the only phenomenal form of thought, and that, as human beings possess no means of perceiving the thoughts of others, nay even their own thoughts, except in the form of words, it was the duty of a student of thought to inquire into the nature of words before he approached or analysed the nature of what we mean by thought, naked thought, nay skinned thought, as it has been truly called, when divested of its natural integuments, the word. They understood what even modern philosophers have

failed to understand, that there is a difference between *Vorstellung* (presentation or percept) and *Begriff* (concept), and that true thought has to do with conceptual words only, nay, that the two, word and thought, are inseparable, and perish when separated." (*Six Systems of Indian philosophy* p. 526).

After establishing to his satisfaction the eternity and consequent authority of the V e d a, Jaimini proceeds to consider the inconvenient questions of the rationalists of his age with regard to those numerous passages of the V e d a which have nothing to do with the D h a r m a of Y a j ñ a, but deal with ordinary worldly matters. To explain this was invented the theory of A r t h a v ā d a, subsidiary, explanatory statement. Whatever in the v e d a was not a commandment was explained away as an explanatory statement. In the schools of the M ĩ m ā m s ā, this fruitful suggestion of separating the sentences of the V e d a into various classes was worked till ultimately was elaborated the division of Vedic sentences into five classes viz., Vidhi, M a n t r a, N ā m a d h e y a, N i s h e d h a, and A r t h a v ā d a. A Vidhi is an injunction occurring in the V e d a and is of four kinds, (1) U t p a t t i - v i d h i, an injunction that originates others (2) V i n i y o g a v i d h i, one in which the auxiliaries of sacrifice are mentioned (3) P r a y o g a v i d h i, injunction of the main sacrificial action (4) A d h i k ā r a

vidhi, which deals with the position one enjoys as the result of a sacrifice. * **A Mantra** is a sentence that serves to remind one of matters connected with sacrifices. Those **Mantras** that do not serve this purpose contribute in some unknown way to the success of the sacrifice †. **Nâmadheyâ** includes specific names of special kinds of sacrifices, like **Udbhid**, **Chitra** etc. **Nishedha** refers to sentences prohibiting certain actions. Lastly, **Arthavâda** passages are those that are subsidiary to **vidhi** or **nishedha** and

* Another classification of **Vidhis** is (1) **Apûrva Vidhi** referring to what is unknown, *e.g.* 'One desirous of heaven should sacrifice' (2) **Niyama Vidhi** referring to what is only partially explained, *e.g.* 'he beats the paddy,' meaning, husks it. (3) **Parisamkhyâ Vidhi**, excluding one of two alternatives. This classification has nothing to do with the four main classes of **Vidhis** mentioned in the text.

† It is noteworthy how the relation between **Mantras** and **Brahmanas** became reversed in the time of **Jaimini**, thus showing the enormous antiquity of the **Mantras**. **Jaimini's** conception of the **Veda** as primarily dealing with **Dharma** can apply only to stray sentences in the **Brâhmanas** and not at all to the **mantras**. Hence a **mantra** is degraded to the position of a sentence which cleverly describes a sacrificial action or serves to remind one of it (*Mtm. Sût. II. i. 31-32*). Instead of the **Brâhmana** being an adjunct to the **Mantra**, it is the reverse; the **Mantras** exist so as to subserve the sacrifices ordained in the **Brâhmanas**. What a contrast to the ancient view of the **Mantras** as a force impelling the Gods, making the Gods themselves grow in strength (*R. V. vi. 17 13, vi. 44-1 3*)!

contain either praise or blame. It is of three classes (1) *Guṇa-vāda* is the statement of a quality contrary to ordinary perception, *e. g.* 'the sun is the sacrificial post'; (2) *Anuvāda* is a statement agreeing with human experience, *e. g.* 'fire is a remedy against cold'; (3) *Bhūtārthavāda* is a statement which is not related to other means of proof, *e. g.* 'Indra raised the thunderbolt against Vritra'*. Gradually the word *Ārthavāda* acquired the meaning of what may be neglected and every inconvenient passage became an *ārthavāda*.

Besides the question of the eternity of the connection between sound and meaning, another metaphysical question was worked out in the schools of the *Mīmāṃsā*—that of *Apūrva* or potential energy. Sacrificial acts are not followed by visible (*dṛishṭa*) fruits. The question, then, rises, how can it act so as to produce a result in the future; 'action at a distance' of time being inconceivable. Therefore it was conceived that sacrifices produced an unseen change (*saṃskāra*) which when the time came operated to bring about the fruit of the sacrifice. This idea is expounded by Jaimini in a brief *sūtra* (II. i. 5), "*chodanā, again, ārambha*" which is thus commented on

* For further discussion of these terms the reader is referred to Dr. Thibaut's edition of the *Ārthasaṃgraha*, of which the above is a condensation.

by Śabara. 'By chodanā we understand Apûrva. 'Apûrva, again' (exists, for) 'Ārambha' is ordained, as in 'Let one desirous of svarga, sacrifice.' Otherwise, the ordinance becomes fruitless, as the sacrifice ends (and is not continued till the fruit is seen). If the sacrifice ends without producing anything else, the fruit cannot be (produced) in the absence of anything. Hence it produces (something). It cannot be said that it (the Yāga) does not itself die, because its fruit is declared; (for) we cannot find any form of (the persistence) of Karma (other than Apûrva). That is said to be Karma which takes its substratum (from one place) to another place; it cannot inhere in the Ātmā, for Ātmā is everywhere.

Ātmā's action (knowledge) being everywhere is evidence of its being everywhere and not of its going (to one place) from another place for the absence of motion does not contradict (the causality of the Ātmā). (Moreover) the material with which sacrifice was associated (ghṛi etc.) is also destroyed (burnt up); as the material is destroyed, it is inferred, the sacrifice, too, is destroyed. The material is destroyed because its ashes are perceived. If it is said that though it is burnt, it still exists, (we reply) that while the existing things (ashes etc.,) are seen, it is not seen. If it is said that the fructification is

evidence (of the existence of the material), one must explain why it is not perceived. If it is thought that (its not being perceived) is due to any one of the causes of invisibility, subtilty etc, * it becomes speculative predication. Then it becomes a question whether *A p û r v a* should be predicated or that (cause). It is more reasonable to predicate a new substance and to, predicate a new property (of the material). If it is said that the *K a r m a* has no substratum, that, too, can be disproved similarly. Though a new property is predicated of it, it cannot obtain motion. Hence (it is concluded) that the sacrifice is destroyed ; as it is destroyed, there exists *A p û r v a*." This *A p û r v a*, then, is the unseen substance in which inheres the fruit of the many sacrifices of the *V e d a*.

Jaimini's *s û t r a s* are, of course, highly disappointing viewed at from the standpoint of the philosopher, but we must remember that Jaimini does not contemplate the analysis of the universe from any special philosophic standpoint. Nor was it possible for him to do so, weighted as he was with an extraordinary load of ritual to be gone through, teeming with a crop of questions of exegesis, whose solutions did not require anything

* Cf. *S ā n k h K ā r*. vii. The fact that *S a u k s h m y ā t* is placed at the head of the list of the causes of invisibility here shows that Sabara does not quite from *Īṣvara Kṛishna* but from a *Sāṅkhya Sūtra* now unknown.

more than grammar and logic. But his followers feeling that his darṣana could hold its own against its rivals only if it discussed the current questions of philosophy included the means of proof (Pramāṇas), the padārthas of the Universe and many other philosophical questions in their discussions of Mīmāṃsā. They are divided into two schools—the Gurumata of Prabhākara and the Bhāṭṭa of Bhāṭṭa Kumārila.

The following reference to the views of the first of these two schools is taken from the *Sarva-Siddhānta rahasya* attributed to Śaṅkarāchārya* "Dravya, Guṇa, Karma, Sāmānya, and Paratantratā† (dependence) are five categories; with Śakti, Sādriṣya (similarity) and Saṅkhyā (number), they are eight. Viśeṣha and Abhāva are not (categories), separate from the earth and other objects in which they inhere. (*Ib. Chap. IX*). Ātmā is other than Buddhi, Indri-

* An incomplete mss. copy of this work with Śeṣha Govinda's commentary thereon was kindly placed at my disposal by Mr. Paravastu Ranganāthasvami proprietor of the Ārsha Library, Vizagapatam.

† Explained by Śeṣha Govinda to be the Samavāya of the Vaiśeṣhikas. "It has beginning and ending. No sensible man will hold that when the material is either destroyed or not produced, the relation can remain independent of the material." Herein the Prābhākaras differ from the Vaiśeṣhikas.

ya, and Śarīras. It is not limited by space (vibhu), eternal. It becomes manifold in various bodies. It manifests itself in the cognition of objects. In the cognition, 'I know the pot,' there are three things at the same time; the pot as object; the subject enters in it as 'I', knowledge manifests itself as self-luminous." (1b). A fairly complete metaphysical system was evolved by Bhaṭṭa Kumārila who lived a little before Śaṅkara's time, in his voluminous *vārttika* on Śabara's *Bhāṣya*, divided into three parts are called *Śloka vārttika*, *Tantravārttika* and *Tūptika*.

The doctrine of the eternity of Sabda was violently attacked by the Nyāya, Vaiśeṣika and Sāṅkhya schools, who all the while pretended the Veda to be authoritative.* Patañjali, the author of *Mahābhāṣya* modified the theory by regarding the substance of the Veda to be eternal, but the words not so. He says, "It is said 'the Vedas are not created (things); the Vedas are eternal'; their sense is eternal, but the order of letters (words etc.) is not eternal, through their difference are produced the versions of the Kāṭhas, Kalāpas, Mudakas, Pippalādakas, etc." (*Mahābhāṣya* IV. iii. 101.)

Bhartṛhari, the famous writer of the 7th. century A. D., expounds the doctrine of the sphoṭa in his *Kārikā* called *Vakyapadiya*. "Those that know sound know that there are two

* Ny. Sū. ii. 81 ff. Vai. Sū. vi. 1. 1; Sāṅ. Sū. v. 45. ff.

sounds in the words that we speak ; one, the cause of sound ; the other is used for indicating an object." (*Vākyapadīya* I. 44). The two sounds referred to are, first, what exists in the mind before the word is actually pronounced, and, second, the pronounced word. "Some of those that follow the ancient path say that these two are different in nature. Others say, we divide in two by our thought what is really one. Just as the light (potential) in the fire-stick (a ra ṇi) is the cause of other lights being produced, so the sound (s ph o ṭ a) in the mind (b u d d h i) is the cause of the various sounds heard (n ā d a). It is first thought out by the mind, then associated with some meaning and then is grasped (by the hearer) as sound. N ā d a is produced in succession (in time) ; but s ph o ṭ a is not before or after (*i. e.* produced in succession). What is not successively produced appears as if gradually made and thus appears divided. As a reflection seems to take on the motion of the water in which it is seen (*lit.* exists), being under the influence of the action of the water, that is the relation of s ph o ṭ a and n ā d a." (*Ib.* i. 45-49). S ph o ṭ a is, thus, the potential word which exists in the mind *i. e.* the mental antecedent that is revealed by the uttered word, as water reveals the moon reflected in it. Kumārila, attacks this s ph o ṭ a theory in his *Śloka Vārttika* on behalf of the Pūrva Mimāṃsā and

Ṣaṅkara, in his *Bhāṣhya*, (*Ved. Sūt.* iii 29) on behalf of the Uttara Mimāṃsā.

The theory of the eternity of sound, like most other theories developed in India, has its roots in the Ṛig Veda, in various hymns of which Vāgdevī is praised. She is often the Gāyatri metre personified; She is called Sarasvatī, Sāvitrī, Satarupā etc. In the Brāhmaṇas she became the solitary companion of the First Born (Brāhma the creator) and co-operated with him in the work of evolving Name and Form. In *Ṣat. Brāh.* X. vi. 5. 4., it is said, 'his mind entered into union with speech' and in the same place she is identified with Aditi. As she represents the power of the Mantras, she later became identical with the Ṣakti of the Āgamas. In the schools of the Ṣaiva cult, where the goddess loses her predominance, the conception reappears *Mait. Up.* vi. 22. as the Ṣabda Brahma, first mentioned in the Bhartṛhari, expounds the doctrine in the *Vākyapadiya* from the standpoint of the philosophy of grammar.

Vijñāna Bhikṣu (who lived in the XVI century), in his *Yogasāra-Saṅgraha* claims the Sphoṭa theory as belonging to the Yoga school and gives a clear exposition of the theory. "Sound is of three kinds. (1) the object of the organs of speech (2) the object of the sense of hearing and (3) the object of Buddhi alone. Of these the sound marked

off (as belonging to) the throat, palate and other places is the object of the organs of speech, as produced by them, the sound produced by the sound in the ear and different from the organs of speech, is the object of the sense of hearing, as being perceived by it.* Words, like 'pot,' etc., however, are the objects of Buddhi alone, for they are grasped by the Buddhi alone, as will be explained. These words manifest meanings, and are hence called Sphoṭa (manifesters). That word is other than the letters which are pronounced one by one by the organ of speech, for each letter dies very soon (after it is uttered) and cannot unite (to form a word) and hence one (whole) word (for the ear to deal with) cannot exist and there will be nothing to denote the meaning (if we except the Sphoṭa). The cause of this Sphoṭa is a specific effort. If it were due to pronunciation by means of many distinct efforts, it will not be possible to regard it as one word, and to refer to one meaning. The discloser of this sphoṭa is the cognition of the last letter preceded by a series of letters. To Buddhi alone belongs the perception of Sphoṭa, for as Buddhi alone can cognize

* The motion of the organs of speech is what is here called the sound that is the object of the organs of speech. The sound heard in the ear is the sound that is the object of the sense of hearing.

a succession (of letters) it is simpler to attribute the disclosure of the S p h o ṭ a to the cognition of this succession than to anything else ; because they coexist.

Hence the s p h o ṭ a cannot be cognized by the ear, for it is impossible for the ear to grasp a succession (of sounds), as *gha* followed by *ṭa* ; moreover, sounds (of single letters) which die in the instant (they are made) cannot unite (with succeeding sounds); hence, as the impression of the letters already pronounced and their memory reside in the a n t a ḥ k a r a ṇ a , the a n t a ḥ k a r a ṇ a , alone can properly be the auxiliary (of the perception of s p h o ṭ a) " (*Ib.* iv.)

Section VI. *The Bhagavadgītā.*

It has been already pointed out that the *Bhagavadgītā* * was an early attempt to weld together the Vedānta, the Sāṅkhya and the Āgama points of view. † Two passages have already been quoted (p. 72-3) describing the conscious supreme Brahma—the one real cosmic ultimate of the Vedāntis. In other passages Krishna propounds the sharp distinction between Puruṣa and Prakṛiti deliberately using the Sāṅkhya technical terms. “Know Prakṛiti and also Puruṣa to be both without a beginning; know that changes of form and guṇas spring from Prakṛiti. The origin of the making of causes and effects is Prakṛiti; Puruṣa is the experience, of pleasure and pain. Puruṣa, established in Prakṛiti, experiences the qualities

* This name has been translated ‘the song celestial’, ‘the Lord’s song’, etc., though there is absolutely no lyrical touch in it. This translation is perhaps due to reminiscences of ‘the song of Solomon’, and the early life of the boy Kṛishna and his flute-playing described in the *Lhāṅgavata purāṇa* and the *Gītāgovinda*. The *Bhagavadgītā* is the ‘divine poem’; or rather ‘the proclamation, in verse, by the Lord.’

† Hence it has lent itself to the tortures of the Bhāṣya-kāras who have commented on it each from only one point of view. All existing translations, too, have been done consciously or unconsciously only from the point of view of one the three great modern sects—Śāṅkara, Rāmānujīya and Mādhva.

born of P r a k ṛ i t i ; his attachment to g u ṇ a s is the cause (of his birth) in good and bad wombs. Onlooker and permitter, lord, experiencer, the great lord, and the supreme self (p a r a m â t m â), too, is he called, P u r u s h a , who is supreme here (in this body)". (xiii. 19-22) " O mighty-armed, learn from me the five causes declared in the S â ṅ k h y a system (as necessary) for the accomplishment of all actions ; the body, the agent, the several organs, the various kinds of several activities, and the presiding deities, the fifth ; whatever action man does by his body, speech and mind, right or wrong these five are the causes thereof. That being so, he who from imperfect understanding sees the lone self to be the actor, verily that fool sees not" (xviii. 13-16).

The Â g a m a analysis of the Universe into three factors is also expounded. " Î ṣ v a r a dwells in the heart-region of all beings, O Arjuna, causing, by his wonder-working power, all beings to revolve as if mounted on a machine" (xviii. 61.) " Another,* indeed, is the Supreme P u r u s h a , called P a r a m â t m a , who, having entered the three worlds* sustains (them), the changeless Î ṣ v a r a ." (xv. 17.)

In the previous Stanza, Krishna has been speaking of the mortal and immortal P u r u s h a s , " loke," which word may mean either " in this world," or as in xv. 18, in the Ś â s - t r a s not based on the Veda, as the rationalistic Yoga or Nyaya.

In various passages Kṛiṣṇa claims to be that īṣvara. "I am unborn, the changeless Ātmā, the lord of beings" (iv. 6), "I am the origin and the end of the whole universe. Nothing exists higher than I, O Dhānāñjaya. All this is strung on me as rows of gems on a thread." (vii. 6-7). The other two tattvas are the two Prakṛitis of Īṣvara. "The discrete Prakṛiti, that is mine, is eight-fold, Earth, water, fire, Vāyu, Ākāśa, Manas, Buddhi and Ahaṅkāra" (vii. 4.) "The great elements, Ahaṅkāra, Buddhi, Avyakta, the organs ten and one, the five ranges of the (sense) organs, desire, hate, pleasure, pain, the (bodily) whole, intelligence, constancy, this is the field (kshetra) described briefly along with its modifications." (xiii. 5-6). This is the lower Prakṛiti, corresponding to the Idamā of the Śāktas, Aśuddhamāya of the Śaivas, Achit of the Vaishnavas. "Know my other Prakṛiti, higher than this, who becomes living (Jīva), O mighty-armed, (and) by whom this Universe is upheld." (vii. 5). "Being a portion of myself, it becomes in the world of the living an eternal living being and attracts to itself the sense-organs of which Manas is the sixth". (xv. 7.) This category is called in the Āgamas Tejas or Ojas and these words occur in xv. 12-14. "What Tejas (light-energy) in the sun brightens up the world, what in the moon, and what

in fire, that Tejas know to be mine. I enter the Earth and support life by my Ojas (energy); becoming Soma, the essence, I nourish all plants. Becoming Vaiṣvānara (the fire of life), I enter the bodies of breathing beings and united with Prāṇa and Apāna (two kinds of winds on which the vital fire is carried), digest the four kinds of food."

These three systems Kṛishṇa, in other passages, tries to transcend and he indicates a Supreme Reality, higher than the conscious One Brahma of the Vedāntīs, the dual Puruṣa and Prakṛiti of the Sāṅkhyas and the triple Īṣvara, Chit and Achit of the Āgamikas. This is called 'Brahma-tat' (vii. 29.), 'Aksharam Brahma paramam' (viii. 3.), 'my supreme abode' (viii. 21.), 'the supreme seat' (viii. 28.). Kṛishṇa calls himself "the pratishṭhā of Brahma, the undying, the changeless, the eternal, the Dharma, the unending bliss" (xiv. 27). Pratishṭhā means pedestal, and hence vehicle. As Kṛishṇa's acknowledging a higher entity than himself goes against the grain of all schools of Vedānta, every commentator, from Śaṅkara onwards has expended a good deal of ingenuity in explaining away the obvious meaning of this passage. §

§ The various interpretations of this sloka are discussed in my forthcoming *Study of the Bhagavadgīta*.

This 'Supreme abode' which Kṛishṇa differentiates so carefully from himself, the Puruṣhotama, and also from a Puruṣa, higher than himself, whom he seems to refer to by the adjectives Kavi, Puraṇa, etc. in viii-9., and by the name Ādi Puruṣa in xv. 4, is frequently called 'Padam' or, *Gati*, path. "Verily there exists higher than that Avyakta (*i. e.* Mūlaprakṛiti) another Avyakta (undifferentiated, noumenon) eternal, which is not destroyed, when all beings are destroyed. It is called Avyakta (the absolute), Akshara (the unchanging); they call it the Supreme Path. Having reached it, no one returns. That is my Supreme abode." (viii-20-21). "There* the sun does not shine, nor the moon, nor fire; having gone there they return not; that is my Supreme abode." (xv. 6.) In this "Supreme abode" the author of the *Bhagavad Gītā* finds the one noumenon into which the ultimate tattvas of the other schools merge. This is the foundation of all that is; on which are established Puruṣas from the lowest to the highest, out of which rise all the elements of the evolved world. It is not conscious being nor is it unconscious being but "that beyond," 'the knower and the known and the Supreme fixed dwelling place' (xi-38.)

* In opposition to the world supported by the *Īṣvara* referred to in xv. 12.

This Supreme Reality as Kṛishṇa conceives it is different from the Nirguṇa Brahma of Śaṅkara. This latter is the Sagūṇa Brahma or conscious Universal Being shorn of 'name and form' used for purposes of meditation; when these distinctions are negated, it is the higher. (*Ved. Sūtr. Bhāṣh.* iv. iii. 4.) Beginningless Avidyā (ignorance) according to Śaṅkara leads us to attribute 'name and form' to that which is not thus limited and this, according to Śaṅkara, is the Param (higher) Brahma, which is Sat, and opposed to Avidyā which is Asat. This doctrine of Avidyā being the cause of 'name and form' is not found in the *Bhagavad Gītā*; nor again the doctrine of Māyā, which Śaṅkara's later followers have elaborated, by which they conceived that the Param Brahma, the one without attributes, who is Sat, Chit, and Ānanda becomes in some inexplicable way entangled in Māyā which is neither existent nor non-existent and thus evolves or rather degenerates into the Sagūṇa Brahma or Īśvara and begins to weave the universe out of nothing. This doctrine is a travesty of the attempt of the early thinkers to find the common noumenon of Sat and Asat.

Rāmānuja on the other hand tries to whittle down all the passages where Krishna describes this supreme noumenon, "whence speech

returns along with mind, being unable to reach" this high level thought. He interprets param-dhâma as a locality, a region of space which Nârâyana has delimited as his special province where he holds his court seated on his serpent throne, the hoods of the serpent acting as his royal umbrella and to which he admits his 'elect' as a matter of favour!

The teachings of the *Bhagavad Gîtâ* have suffered more than those of any other Indian book from the hands of the Commentator.* It is not cryptic in style like the Sûtras; but yet, from the great veneration paid to it on account of its supposed authorship and on account of its real superiority to every other scripture, Indian or non-Indian, so many Bhâshyakâras have attempted to use it for buttressing up their special theories and expended their tender mercies on it. Its teachings and its locutions, technical or otherwise have been violently tampered with by the commentators who did not possess what we call a 'literary conscience'. The commentator did not aim to discover what exactly his author thought or attempted to express, but used the text for supporting his own special theories. If any passages were inconveniently opposed to the commentator's theories, they were to be explained away

* e. g., ii, 16. has been so done to death that it is impossible to discover what its author meant thereby.

by utilizing grammatical and etymological tricks. Thus the *Svetāśvatara Upanishad* is indispensable to the Vaishṇavas; but it sings the praises of Rudra and not Viṣṇu. Hence Rudra is explained by Raṅgarāmānuja, * as *Samśāra rujo drāvayati*, who drives away the disease of saṁsāra. (*Śvet. Up. Bhāṣh* iii. 2). In the *Chhândogya Upanishad*, Janaśruti who learns the Samvarga Vidya from Raikva is called a Śûdra (*Ib.* iv. 2. 3). Since the Śûdra is unfit for Brahma Vidya, Śaṅkara explains that the word Śûdra can be etymologised as *śuchādravaṇa*, the rushing of grief. (*Ved. Sût. Bhāṣh.* I. iii. 4.). *Bhagavad Gîtâ* xiv. 27 is explained in two possible ways by Śaṅkara. Everywhere it is a case of how inconvenient passages can be explained away and not what the original author thought. The more ingenuity displayed by the commentator, though in violation of what we nowadays regard as laws of evidence, the greater is the admiration of the devout follower. Even European scholars have quietly succumbed to the spell of Śaṅkara's verbal gymnastics so much so that Max Müller, Deussen and Gough in translating passages from the Upanishads put into them matter found not in the

* A recent Vaishṇava commentator of the Upanishads who slavishly follows Śaṅkara, except where Viśiṣṭādvaita points have to be driven in. Rāmānuja did not comment on the Upanishads.

text but only in *Ṣaṅkara Bhāṣhya*. No interpreter of other people's thoughts, especially the thoughts of the ancients can escape reading some of his own thoughts into his author's book, but we might at least honestly strive to minimize this tendency and strenuously avoid reading a third man's thoughts also therein.

Besides this one fruitful source of confusion, another more potent one has also been operative. These different schools of Vedānta have in modern India all become orthodox revealed religion. The Vedānta being orthodox, it was felt that the other schools ought to be assimilated to it and hence the commentator has felt it necessary to furnish the Sāṅkhyā, Pūrva Mīmāṃsā and Vaiśeṣika schools with a God for whom Kapila, Jaimini and Kaṇāda had no place or need in their systems; to mix up the Īśvara of Yoga, the Paramātmā of Nyāya and Brahma of Vedānta; to confuse the non-committal word Purusha of Sāṅkhyā with the Jīvātmā of the *Upanishad*; to identify Brahma, Paramātmā, Purushottama and Īśvara wherever they occur in the *Bhagavad Gītā*.

This spirit has in recent times been further complicated by the necessity for extolling the Advaita at the expense of the other schools. Hence has been invented the extraordinary theory of the temporary validity of the other schools as

steps leading to the *A d v a i t a*, which Madhusûdana Sarasvati propounded in his *Prasthâna bheda* and Vijñâna Bhikshu in his *Sâṅkhya pravachana Bhâṣhya*. (*Vide* Muir's Original Sanskrit texts iii. pp. 194-202). The immediate reality of which every one can be certain is the momentary experiences of changing states of consciousness, the kaleidoscopic changes of *Chittavṛitti*. Metaphysics is the attempt to classify them, pigeon-hole them under general categories which will systematize them, reduce the chaos of immediate experience into an intelligible cosmos. These cosmic ultimates must necessarily be concepts of the mind and not objective realities independent of the mind. The mind analyses its own experiences for the purpose of guiding its own function in ordered ways, so as not to be a helpless waif in the buffeting of the waves of experiences and memories. The fact that different minds are attracted by different methods of metaphysical analysis indicates that minds themselves are coloured by different temperaments and hence each self-consistent metaphysical system, if it explains all the experiences of the inquiring mind is as valid as the others. Cosmic ultimates are not material, objective realities that can be reached or acquired. There cannot possibly be any merit in devoutly believing in the 'correctness' or orthodoxy of any particular system. But

each mind has to find out what system attracts it, what method of analysis appeals to it and following that method, analyse its experiences, train to distinguish its place in the cosmos, so that the enlightening consciousness bound up with it might 'free' itself from the mind in which it is involved and soar to its own levels wherefrom there is no return to bondage.

——:o:——

CHAPTER III.

THE WORLD-PROCESS.

THE question of the nature of the world-process, what kind of change in the material of the universe underlies its endless Becoming has also been variously answered. The material of which any substance is made is called Upādāna Kāraṇam; we have seen in the last chapter that the material of the world is held by the Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika school to be heterogeneous—nine different substances going to make up the cosmos. All the other schools teach that the material cause of the world is homogeneous, the Sāṅkhya-Yoga regarding it as unconscious matter and the rest as conscious Brahma. Hence have arisen two opposed theories, called the Ārambha-vāda, the theory of atomic combination and the Pariṇāmavāda, the theory of transmutation. The former theory holds the atoms of matter, *i. e.* of elemental earth, water, fire and air to be Ārambha Upādānam, lit. originating material, material which originates all objects of the world without losing each its own specific nature, just as yarn, when woven into cloth,

still retains its own character as yarn. In the other theory the cause of the world is *Parīṇāma Upādānam*, material which undergoes transmutation, *i. e.*, loses its distinctive character when evolving into objects, just as milk loses its character as milk when it becomes curd, as the flower is no more the flower when it becomes the fruit.

This divergence of theory with regard to the nature of the world-process necessarily led to difference of view with regard to the relation of cause and effect. The *Nyāya-Vaiṣeṣikas* hold the *Asatkāryavāda*, the theory of the non-existence of the cause in the effect, and the other schools hold the opposite theory—the *Satkāryavāda*, the identity of cause and effect, the potential pre-existence of the effect in the cause.

A. ĀRAMBHA VĀDA.

Kaṇāda, in *Vaiṣ. Sūtr.* VII. ii. 7. says, "causal and effected substances are not one and identical, because unity and identity are not cognized between them." Yarn is the cause of the cloth into which it is woven but we cognize yarn as different from cloth. The connection of cause and effect is hence one of coinherence, *Samavāya*. "That is coinherence whence (we say) of cause and effect, this is here." *Ib.* VII. ii. 26. The conjunction of a thread and a pot on which it lies is accidental, but that of a mat and the grass

blades of which it is constituted is *Samavāya* coinherence. "A substance is said to be a cause on account of its inhering in its effects." *Ib.* X. ii. 1. The ultimate substances of the universe are the causes of all objects, which are produced by their conjunctions. These constituent substances preserve each its own qualities but yet combine to produce objects with qualities previously non-existent. "An effect is non-existent previous (to its being produced) because actions and qualities cannot be predicated of it." *Ib.* IX. i. 1.

The same subject is referred to by Gautama in the *Nyāya Sūtras* IV. 48-50. The first of these *Sūtras* explains the opponent's view, (*Pūrvapakṣam*) and the succeeding two, the view of the author of the *Sūtras* (*Siddhāntam*). They run as follows:—

"(The effect, before it is produced,) is neither non-entity, nor entity, nor again entity-non-entity because entity and non-entity are incongruous." *Ny. Sūtra* IV. 48. On this *Vātsyāyana* comments thus:—"Before (an effect is) produced, the effect to be produced cannot be a non-entity, because of the necessity of the material, *i. e.*, a particular material is used for producing a particular object ; all materials do not produce all objects. Hence it cannot be held to be a non-entity. It is not an entity ; because it is not admissible to predicate existence of that which is produced, before its

production. It is not an entity-non-entity, because entity and non-entity are incompatible with each other, for entity is the admission of an object and non-entity is the denial of an object. These two are opposed to each other and not the same". This argument is refuted by Gautama in the next two sūtras. "That which is produced is truly a non-entity before its production, because both its production and destruction are witnessed by us." (*Ib.* 49.) "(Though the effect before its production) is a non-entity, it is determined by the mind.", *i. e.* conceived by the mind. (*Ib.* 50.)

This fundamental position of the Vaiṣeṣhika and the Nyāya Schools was forced on them by their scientific (as opposed to metaphysical) temper. When we deal with the actual objects of the universe, analyse and reconstruct them, we find that qualities which do not exist in the constituents appear when an object is constituted out of them and that therefore the *A s a t k â r y a v â d a* rests on a solid basis of experimental fact. That in the later developments of Indian philosophy, this theory was eclipsed by the rival one of the *S a t k â r y a v â d a* was due to the fact that the foundations of science laid by the *V a i ṣ e ṣ h i k a s* and *N a i y â y i k a s* of old were overlaid with a load of verbal gymnastics and dull dialectics, just as in Europe, the science of ancient Greece was choked out of life by the logic of the Schoolmen. But that the

A s a t k â r y a v â d a itself is a valid concept, accepted by modern science is proved by the following extracts from Sir Oliver Lodge's *Life and Matter*. "A property can be possessed by an aggregation of atoms which no atom possesses in the slightest degree." (*Ib.* p. 91) "It must not be thought that aggregation only produces quantitative change and leaves quality unaltered. Fresh qualities altogether are liable to be introduced or to make their appearance at certain stages—critical stages—in the building up of a complex mass." (*Ib.* p. 186.) "It may be said that a sun differs from a dark planet only in size ; for it is just the fact of great size which enables its gravitative shrinkage and earthquake-subsidence to generate an immense quantity of heat and to maintain the mass for eons at an excessively high temperature, thereby fitting it to become the centre of light and life to a number of worlds. The blaze of the sun is a property which is the outcome of its great mass. A small permanent sun is an impossibility. Wherefore, properties can be possessed by an aggregate or assemblage of particles which in the particles themselves did not in the slightest degree exist." (*Ib.* p p. 72-3).

The N y â y a - V a i ś e ś h i k a theory of the production of the cosmos by perpetual conjunctions and disjunctions of atomic as well as non-atomic substances is called Ā r a m b h a - v â d a . The basic axiom of the *Vaiśeshika Sūtras* is " D r a v y -

aṇi dravyāntaram ārabhante" (Ib. I. i. 10), substances originate other substances, without themselves being destroyed. Probably as Rāmānuja points out in his *Śrī Bhāṣya*, II. i. 15, the word **ārabh** is **ā+labh**, to touch, to grasp and the Vaiṣeṣhika conception of the essential cosmic process is that the elementary substances embrace one another to form objects and while such a conjunction lasts, a new property is produced; when an object is destroyed, the atoms are disjoined, that property disappears and the atoms are free to form fresh conjunctions. This conception is the same as the picture of the behaviour of atoms in the atomic theory of modern chemistry.

The atoms were conceived as "round, extremely minute, invisible, incapable of division, eternal in themselves but not in their aggregate forms". (Davies, *Hindu Philosophy*, p. 128). They were called aṇu (atom) or paramāṇu (ultimate atom). The combination of two atoms constitutes a dvyaṇuka, (two-atom), or molecule. Molecules combine into objects.

The formation and destruction of the various objects of the universe is due to the conjunctions and disjunctions of the four kinds of atoms. The following account of the evolution of a red baked claypot out of a black unbaked one is taken from *Siddhānta Muktvālī* and given as a specimen of the degeneration to

which the valid Vaiseshika ideas attained for want of pursuing them with the help of the experimental method of modern science. "From conjunction with fire an action (is produced) in the ultimate atoms which exist combined as *dvaayanukas*, molecules, (of the unbaked pot); thence a disjunction of the ultimate atoms from each other; thence the destruction of the conjunction which had produced (the molecule); thence the destruction of the molecule; thence the destruction of the blackness (of the ultimate atom); then the origination of red etc. (in the ultimate atom); thence the action auxiliary to the production (*ârambha*) of a (new) object; thence disjunction (of the atom from the space it occupied temporarily); thence the destruction of the previous conjunction (with space soon after its reduction to the state of ultimate atoms); thence the conjunction (of the atoms) to produce (the red baked pot); thence the production of molecules (*dvaayanukas*); thence the origin of red etc. (in the molecule)". This maze of words constructed by unrestricted ingenuity satisfies the cravings of the modern Hindu Nyaya-Vaiṣeṣika philosopher and does duty for physics in his studies. Endless disputations displaying a diabolical ingenuity beguile his tedium and satisfy his instinct for physical research!

Who started this complicated dance of the atoms? It has been pointed out in the last chapter

that the Sûtras of Kanâda do not contemplate a supreme creator. The question then arises, who first set the atoms in motion and started the world process. Kanâda occupies an agnostic position with regard to this. He proves the existence of an *adrishṭa*, unseen, cause of some actions. These are actions other than that due to an impulse (e. g., the action of fire on a bamboo), an impact (e. g., the action of an axe), or a conjunction (e. g., of a harness with a horse). These latter three actions are explicable, referable to a known agency. There are actions other than these, caused by an unseen cause. (*Vaiṣ Sūtr.* V. ii. 2), like circulation of sap in trees, (*Ib.* 7.). "The upward flaming of fire, the sideward motion of wind, the first action of atoms and of *manas* are due to an unseen cause". (*Ib.* 13.) Kanâda thus deliberately avoids predicating a cause of creation. Praśastapâda teaches the orthodox modern Hindu theory of creation by *Brahmâ* and destruction by *Śiva*. "At the end of one hundred years of the measure of *Brahmâ*, He reaches the time of his release. Then *Maheṣvara*, the Lord of all the worlds desires to destroy (all beings) so that all living beings that are troubled in *saṃsâra* may enjoy a night's rest. Then cease the functions of all the *adrishṭa* (unseen, potential result of acts) of all beings, that causes the bodies, sense-organs and great elements. Then, by the action of the desire of *Maheṣvara* and the union

of *Ātmā* and the atoms, is produced a disjunction of the atoms that produce the body and the sense-organs. Hence their union ceases and they become destroyed and sink back into *Paramāṇus* (ultimate atoms). Similarly, of the great elements—Earth, water, fire and air, by the same cause, each is destroyed and absorbed into the following one. Then the disjoined ultimate atoms alone remain. Then *Ātmās* remain with the potential deposit of their good and bad deeds attached to them. Afterwards, for the experience of the living beings, (is born) the desire of *Maheṣvara* to create. Then the *adṛishṭa* resumes its functions in all *Ātmās*. By the support of this *adṛishṭa* and the union of *Ātmā* and atoms, an action is produced in the ultimate atoms of Air. They become mutually conjoined into a molecule of two-atoms etc., in proper order. Thus is produced a great wind which moves in the *Akāśa*. Then therein similarly a great ocean of water is produced by the atoms of water and it flows in a great flood. Then in that very ocean by the ultimate atoms of earth, conjoining in the regular order into molecules etc., a great earth is produced and remains firm. Then in that very ocean by the atoms of fire is produced in the order of molecules etc. a great collection of rays of fire which remains burning. When these four great elements are thus born, by the mere will of

the Supreme *Īṣvara*, a huge sphere is born from the atoms of fire supported by the atoms of Earth. Therein He creates *Brahmā*, with four lotus-faces, the grandfather of all the universe as well as the worlds and commands Him to create all beings. Being commanded by *Maheṣvara*, *Brahmā*, possessed of wonderful knowledge, dispassion and power knows the fruits of the acts of all beings and creates his sons—the mind-born *Prajāpatis*, *Manu*, the *Devas*, the *Rishis*, and the *Pitṛis*, the four castes from his face, arms, thighs and feet, and all other beings high and low, each endowed with knowledge, enjoyment and length of life according to their Karma. He endows them with virtue, knowledge, dispassion and power, each according to his desire." (*Praśast. Bhā.* Bombay Edn. p. 18-19.)

It was also pointed out in the last chapter that the *Nyāya Sūtras* conceive of God as the cause of the distribution of the fruits of action, because such fruits are not always visible soon after the action. A definite refutation of all atheistic systems was undertaken by *Udayana*, the great teacher of *Nyāya*, in his *Kusumāñjali*, probably written in the 12th century. This book is remarkable in that it is the only Sanskrit theological book solely and directly dealing with the question of the existence of God, like the numerous European books on the subject.

by the Schoolmen and by Protestant theologians. It is divided into five chapters, each chapter being regarded a cluster of *K u s u m a* flowers. In the first chapter Udayana establishes that there is an *a d r i s h ṭ a*, an unseen cause of events of the world. Thus far Kaṇāda went but Udayana goes one step further, by blending the *Nyāya* with the *Vaiṣeshika* position and pointing out that *a d r i s h ṭ a* cannot operate as a cause, except by means of the concurrent energy of *Îṣvara* (*Kusu-māñjali* i. 18. 19). He, then, demolishes the atheism of the *Mīmāṃsa* by pointing out that as right knowledge of the Veda requires an external source, since even the Veda is destroyed during *p r a l a y a* and it has to be repromulgated at creation, *Îṣvara* is proved to be the source of traditional knowledge. (*Ib.* ii. 1). He then meets the arguments that are generally used to prove the non-existence of God from the six methods of testimony, perception (*p r a t y a k s h a*), inference (*a n u m ā n a*), analogy (*u p a m ā n a*), tradition (*ś a b d a*), presumption (*a r t h ā p a t t i*), and non-perception (*a n u p a l a b d h i*). The general trend of the argument here is that as the various methods of proof themselves depend on Him for their validity they are paralysed by "looking into His face" and though they are unable to prove His existence, they are enough to disprove arguments against it. (*Ib.* III. 23.)

Udayana then disproves the Mīmāṃsa argument that even if God existed, he could not be a source of right knowledge, for this consists in knowing what was not known before. He rebuts this by defining right knowledge to be intuitive unerring perception. (*Ib.* IV. 6.) Finally Udayana offers eight positive arguments. "From effects *, combination, sustenance, traditional arts, traditional knowledge, Śruti, texts and num (underlying creation), can be proved an omniscient eternal Being". (*Ib.* V. 1.) Thus was the Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika once for all wedded to theism and it continues to affect modern Indian thought chiefly through the Śaiva and Vaiṣṇava sects.

B. PARIṆĀMA VĀDA

The Sāṅkhya, the Yoga, the Vedānta, and the Āgama schools conceive of the relation of cause and effect differently. They maintain the Sat-kārya vāda, the theory that the effect exists in an unmanifested form in the cause. The following five arguments are given in the *Sāṅkhya Kārikā*, ix, to uphold the theory that the effect exists antecedent to its manifestation. (1) A non-existent thing cannot be produced. Oil cannot be pressed out of sand. (2) To produce every effect we take an appropriate material. For making curd we take milk, not water. (3) Any effect does not

* The argument from design.

result from any cause. (4) An agent does only what it is able to do. (5) The effect has the same nature as the cause. Cloth has the same nature as the threads of which it is woven. The Sāṅkhya thus reverses the Vaiśeṣika view. The latter holds that the thread coinheres in the cloth; therefore the cloth which did not exist before its production, has been originated by its cause, the thread. The former holds that the cloth inheres in the thread in an unmanifested form before its production and its production is therefore but the manifestation of a latent object.

The *Vedānta Sūtras* devote a section (a d h i - k a r a ṇ a) to the S a t k ā r y a v ā d a, the doctrine of the identity of cause and effect. "That they (cause and effect) are not different (is to be inferred) from the words "*Origin*, etc." (*Ib* II. i. 14). The word '*origin*' is found in *Chh. Up.* VI, i. 4., "As my dear, by one lump of clay all that is made of clay is known, the change being a name having its '*origin*' in speech." The next Sūtras (15-16) give further reasons. "From perception (of the cause) when (the effect) exists"*. "From the later existing (in the original cause)"; in the sentence 'This, my dear, in the beginning was but S a t', (*Chh. Up.* VI. ii. i.), it is said that this evolved world was in the beginning merely the causal

* Sankara interprets this Sūtra thus :—"From the perception (of the effect) when (the cause) exists.

entity, in other words, the effect was concealed in the cause. The Āgama schools also accept the Satkāryavāda generally; though they seldom discuss this fundamental question of philosophy.

The Satkāryavāda—the concept of the “persistence of the really existent”, underlies all philosophy, ancient and modern. “Whatever really and fundamentally *exists* must, so far as bare existence is concerned, be independent of ‘
It may go through many changes, and thus have a history; that is to say, must have definite time-relations, so far as changes are concerned; but it can hardly be thought of as either going out of existence, or as coming into existence, at any given period, though it may completely change its form and accidents; every thing basal must have a past and a future of some kind or other, though any special concatenation or arrangement may have a date of origin and of destruction.....The thing that *is*, both *was* and *shall be*” (Lodge. *Life and Matter*, pp. 101-3).

Both the Satkāryavāda and the Asatkāryavāda, though opposed to each other as theories are not necessarily mutually exclusive when used for explaining the cosmos. Explanation is a mental attempt to form a picture of what is outside the mind. An explanation must be self-consistent otherwise it fails; but a self-consistent explanation should not be imagined to include *the whole of*

from decay and death till, (on attaining Moksha) they are released from connection with the Lingadeha. (*Sāṅkh. Kār.* lv.)

2. YOGA.

The Yoga school accepts *in toto* the scheme of the past evolution of the Universe as taught by the Sāṅkhyas; but its especial concern is more with the future release of the soul that is bound and the means of securing that desirable consummation. The Satkāryavāda is accepted in *Yoga Sūtras* iv. 12. "The past and the future (forms of things) exist in their essence, the cause (of development of various) properties is due to change (of time, place etc.)". The substratum contains in it all forms in latency and they manifest themselves in due time. "They are (either) visible or subtile and are of the nature (of modifications) of the Guṇas." (*Ib.* iv. 14). These subtle and visible forms of objects start their course of evolution on account of the contiguity of the seer and for his sake. "Though variegated by innumerable impressions (mental deposits of souls associated with the objects) they exist for another (*i. e.* the seer) because they operate on account of association (with him)." (*Ib.* iv. 23).

The stages of evolution are four. "The stages (of the evolution) of the Guṇas are the specific,

(*viśeṣha*), non-specific (*aviśeṣha*) the *liṅga-mātra* and the *aliṅga*. (*Ib.* ii. 19). The “specific” (*viśeṣha*) or complex comprises the objects of the world. The ‘non-specific’ are the simple pure sensations (*tanmātra*) of which all objects are compounded and the *Ahaṁkāra*—the foundation of the cognition of I and not-I. The *liṅga-mātra*, the mere characteristic, the touch of matter that colours the pure consciousness of the *Purusha* and characterizes him as a bound soul, is *Buddhi*. The *aliṅga* is the characterless, homogeneous *Pradhāna*.

After all objects are evolved they continue in a state of constant flux, for flux is life. This flux is of three kinds, *Dharma*, *Lakṣaṇa* and *Avasthā*. (*Ib.* iii. 13). This triple flux affects objects and the organs of perception and the action by means of which we contact them. (*Ib.*) *Dharma* is change of characteristic. Thus when a pot is made of a lump of clay, the (material) clay gives up the characteristics of a lump and takes on the characteristics of a pot. This is the flux of *Dharma*, affecting the *Dharmī* (material), clay. This flux—change of characteristic—consists of two moments, (1) the rise of the new characteristic (of the pot), (2) the destruction of the old characteristic (of the lump). *Dharma* is thus the flux of form while the *Dharmī*, material, is permanent; the various characteristics,

the outgoing and the incoming ones are both existent, only when the former is held in check (*nirodha*) the latter manifests itself. Thus when the *lumpiness* (*piṇḍatva*) of clay is held in check, its *pot-hood* (*ghaṭatva*) is in manifestation (*vyutthāna*). Dharma itself, is subject to a triple flux, called *Lakṣhaṇa*, the flux of time. The form of a pot is a Dharma of clay. This form has three states with reference to time—future, present and past. So long as the pot is not made, but is only as it were immanent in the clay, it is *prospective pot-hood* (*anāgata ghaṭatvam*). This quality of capability of becoming a pot is held in check (*nirodha*) and *present pot-hood* (*vartamāna ghaṭatvam*) comes into manifestation (*vyutthāna*) when a pot takes shape. Similarly a statue exists in latency in marble before the sculptor carves it. Carving is the act of keeping the latency under control so that the actual statue may manifest itself. When, finally, the pot is broken, its *persent pot-hood* is held in check and its state as a past (*atīta*) pot is manifested. Thus goes on this procession of each form of each object from a prospective to a present and on to a past state (*Lakṣhaṇa*), each presenting two moments, *Nirodha* and *Vyutthāna*, one moment merging and another manifesting itself. The flux of an object with regard to time is thus

analysed, so that the fundamental idea of *Sat-kāryavāda*, that nothing is created, nothing destroyed, may be consistently followed in explanation of the world-flux. While the triple flux of *Lakṣhaṇa* takes place, *Dharma* is fixed. The idea of *Lakṣhaṇa* as a procession of temporal states of a form is indicated by each state being called an *Adhvā* (way). Each *advhā* contains a *Nirodha* and a *Vyutthāna*, one state checked and another manifested. *Nirodha* and *Vyutthāna* are always acting. If the former is strong and the latter is weak, a certain state is kept under control; when the latter is strong and the former is weak, manifestation of a state results. Thus *Nirodha* and *Vyutthāna*, each has two phases; in *Nirodha*, *Nirodha* is strong and *Vyutthāna* is weak; in *Vyutthāna*, *Vyutthāna* is strong and *Nirodha* is weak. Each of these phases is called an *Avasthā*. Thus *Dharma* is the flux (*Pariṇāma*) of *Dharmī*, *Lakṣhaṇa* is the flux of *Dharma* and *Avasthā* is the flux of *Lakṣhaṇa*. This intricate analysis of the flux of objects taken from *Vyāsa's Commentaries on Yoga Sūtras* III. 13, reminds us of the barren hair-splitting of the *Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika* School; its only virtue, if it is virtue at all, being a consistent carrying out of the doctrine of *Ex nihilo nihil fit*. *Chittavṛitti*, the flux of psychoses, is

similarly analysed, but this will be discussed elsewhere.

3. VEDĀNTA.

So early as in the age when the *Ṛiks* were composed, was the momentous question raised, "what was the wood, what was the tree, out of which they fashioned the heaven and the earth? Inquire mentally, ye sages, what was that on which he took his stand when establishing the worlds?" (*Rigveda*, X. 81. 4). The question was answered in the *Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa*, II. viii. 9. 6., "Brahma was the wood, Brahma the tree from which they shaped the heaven and the earth. Ye sages, I tell you, he stood on Brahma supporting the worlds." This process of world-shaping is called *pariṇāma*, the march of forms on an unchanging material substratum, in *Ved-Sūt.* I. iv. "(Brahma is the material cause of the universe) as it is said He meditated ('may I become many, may I grow forth'), as both (creation and dissolution) are referred in the Veda directly (to Him, as in *Tait. Brāh.* II. viii. 9. 6. above quoted), as (it is said) He Himself made Himself (*Tait. Up.* II. 7.), by *pariṇāma*" (*Ved. Sūt.* I. iv. 24-27).

The question, then, rises, how can Brahma, who is conscious Being evolve into the forms of unconscious (*jāḍa*) material objects? This diffi-

culty does not occur in the Sāṅkhyā parīṇāma vāda wherein unconscious material objects evolve out of an unconscious causal proto-matter. The Sāṅkhya therefore objects to the Vedānta appropriating his theory "on account of the difference of that (*viz.* the world, from Brahma)" (*Ved. Sūtr.* II. i. 4.) The Vedānta Sūtras meet this objection tersely, "But it is seen" (*Ib.* II. i. 6), that the world presents many instances of things of different nature related as cause and effect, e. g. hairs and nails grow out of man, scorpions out of cow dung, worms out of honey. To this crude way of meeting this difficulty, the Āchāryas add each a clever supplementary argument derived from their sectarian teachings. Śaṅkara argues that evolution of the objects that constitute the world is illusory (*vivarta parīṇāma*) and Brahma is but the seeming material (*vivarta upādāna*),* "Brahma becomes the substratum of all phenomenal changes like evolution etc., superimposed on him by Avidyā (ignorance); in His real nature he remains beyond all phenomenal changes and untransformed" (*Comm. on Ved. Sūtr.* II. i. 27). Rāmānuja attributes to Brahma even in his causal state (*Kāraṇāvasthā*), a subtle body made up of individual souls and the elements of matter that have become absorbed in Him. During the *Kāryāvasthā*, when the

* Hence the advaita is called the *vivarta vāda*.

world is in manifestation, it is this body of His that evolves, He Himself being the unchangeable, *avyakta*.

Thus all schools interpose between Brahma that is Pure Conscious Being and the evolved world, a state of proto-matter which is held to be real or illusory according as consistency with their fundamental metaphysical position requires. The hiatus between Brahma and this proto-matter is the weak point of all Vedānta theories. This original state of proto-matter, 'Mūlaprakṛiti' as the Sāṅkhyas call it, is called *Asat* in the Vedas. "*Asat* was this at first, from it sprang *Sat* (*Tait. Up.* II 7. 1; *Chh. Up.* III 19. 1)." "*Sat* is founded upon *Asat*. Beings (*bhūtas*) are founded upon *Sat*." (*Athar. Ved.* XVII i. 19). "From *Asat*, *Manas* was created. *Manas* created *Prajāpati*. *Prajāpati* created beings." (*Tait. Brāh* II. ii. 9. 10). "*Asat* was this at first. They say, 'what is this *Asat*? The *Ṛishis* say that 'At first *Asat* existed'." (*Sat Brāh* VI. i. 1. 1.) By *Asat*, therefore, is meant a state when distinct objects were not evolved, a state of homogeneity, *

* "*Sat* denotes the existence of things in the manifold forms of the external world, the *Daseyn* of Hegel, the *Natura Naturata* of Spinoza and *Asat* is the opposite of this, or the formless *Prakṛiti*. . . . *Sat* corresponds in each separate form to the 'being-this' of Hegel . . . 'By virtue of its predicate of merely being-this, every something is a finite' and therefore it is an *effect*, because otherwise we

the chaos of the Greeks. This state is also called **T a m a s**, to be distinguished from **T a m a s**, one of the three *guṇas*. "**T a m a s** existed, enveloped by **T a m a s**, in the beginning" (*Rig-Veda* X. 129. 3). "In the beginning **T a m a s** alone was this." (*Mait. Up.* V. 2). By **T a m a s**, darkness, was symbolized a state when nothing objective is manifested. Another and frequently used symbol of the unmanifested state of matter, is 'water'. "All th^{is} was undifferentiated water." (*Rig-Veda*, X. 129. 3. "At first all this was water, (nothing) but water." (*Śat. Brāh.* XI. i. 6. 1. 9, *Tait. Sam.* VII. i. 5. 1., *Tait. Brāh.* I. i. 3. 5., *Tait. Āraṇ.* I. 2 3. 1.)

Sṛiṣṭi, creation, started with an agitation of this primeval matter. **Sṛiṣṭi** is more properly emission, the emission of energy into the waters, which started the work of evolution. This first starting of creative activity is described in the earlier writings as a 'desire'. "Desire (**K â m a**)

could only conceive it as absolute being and therefore unlimited . . . Dr. Muir, however, refers to the commentators on the *Rigveda* who explain **A sat** as meaning 'an undeveloped state', and adds that if we accept this statement there will be no contradiction. **A sat** does not mean simply an undeveloped state, but the state of pure or formless existence of the primal substance from which all forms have sprung. It is clear, however, that if **A sat** means an undeveloped state, then **Sat** must mean, not the essence of anything, but a developed state". Davies, *Hindu Phil.* pp. 136-8. But Davies forgets that sometimes **Sat** is used for the essence, the noumenal entity as in *Chh. Up.* VI. ii. 1. 2.

first arose in it, this was the seed of mind, that which was first. Wise men, by mental introspection, have found this bridge between *Asat* and *Sat*". (*Rig-veda* x. 129. 4.) "Being *Asat*, it desired 'may I become *Sat*'" (*Tait. Brâh.* II ii. 9. 1.) In the theistic *Âgama* schools, this desire is furnished with a motive, that of leading individual souls to salvation (*Moksha*); but this idea is not found in the early literature. On the contrary, it is said that creation is "not on account of any (special) purpose but is a mere sport (*lîlâ*), such as we see in ordinary life (when people play)" (*Ved. Sât.* II. i. 32. 33). The desire that underlies the evolution of the world, the will to manifest is not due to the motive to gain something thereby; nor is it due to constraint, but spontaneous, self-initiated out-flow of energy.

"From *Asat* came *Sat*". "From *Asat* was created *Manas*". These words *Sat*, *Manas*, indicate the earliest beginnings of evolution, the stage when existence could be predicated, when homogeneous proto-matter was streaked with the first marks of differentiation. "It (*Sat*) developed, it became an egg" (*Chh. Up.* III. xix. 1.) "*Manas* created *Prajâpati*". This represents the next stage, *Prajâpati*, on the one hand and the world-egg on the other. The former was the *Âdi Purusha*, the first male, the creator with some elements of personality in

him ; the latter was the first discrete form of the universe ; These are the two lines of evolution. *

The work of Prajâpati is described variously in various cosmogonic hymns. Most frequently it is described as T a p a s (meditation accompanied by austerity). "He desired, 'may I become many, may I produce children.' He performed t a p a s ; after he performed tapas, he emitted all this; and whatever there is. Having emitted it, he entered into it." (*Tait. Up.* II. 6.) "Prajâpati desired, 'may I produce children.' He performed t a p a s ; he became pregnant. He became yellow-brown. Hence a pregnant woman becomes yellow-brown. Being pregnant with a foetus, he became exhausted. Being exhausted, he became black-brown. Hence an exhausted person becomes black-brown." (*Tait. Brâh.* II. iii. 8. 1.) Prajâpati's work is also conceived as a sexual act. "The Âtmâ, in the form of a Purusha, was this at first. Looking around, he saw (there was) none but himself. . . He desired a second. He was as much as a man and woman locked in embrace. He made himself fall asunder in two parts. Thus arose man and wife. He cohabited with her. Thence men were born." (*Śat. Brâh.* XIV. iv. 2. 1.) Creation is also described as due to uttering mantras. "With 'Bhûh,' Prajâpati

* In some legends Prajapati came out of the golden egg, *Śat. Brâh.* XI. i. 6. 2.

generated this ; with 'Bhuvah', the intermediate region ; with 'Svaha,' the sky". (*Ib.* VI. i. 4. 11). It is also conceived as a sacrifice. The ritual of the Vedic sacrifice was supposed to be an earthly copy of this sacrifice of creation. Vishṇu is generally referred to as the sacrificial victim. Lastly, creation is sometimes described as an act of self-sacrifice. "Brahma, the self-existent was in contemplation. He thought, 'there is no infinity in this contemplation. I shall sacrifice myself in beings and beings in myself.' Then sacrificing Himself in all beings and all beings in Himself, he acquired superiority, self-effulgence and lordship." (*Śat. Brāh.* XIII. vii. 1. 20.)

The Golden Egg of the universe developed in "the period of a year. It burst in two. The two halves became (one) golden and (the other) silver. The silver (half) is this earth, the golden (half) the sky ; the chorion, mountains, the amnion, cloud and mist ; the bloodvessels, rivers and the fluid, the ocean." (*Chh. Up.* III. 19. 1-2.)

The order in which the various beings were created also varies in different accounts. The *Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa* makes it out to be Asuras, Fathers (Pitṛis), men, Devas (*Ib.* II. iii. 8. 1.). The elements were created in the order in which the Sāṅkhya makes them evolve. "From that Âtmâ sprang Âkāśa, from Akāśa air, from air fire, from fire water, from water earth, from earth herbs, from

herbs food, from food retas (seed,) from retas m en." (*Tait. Up.* II. 1.). By 'man' here we must here understand his gross body, for in the previous series he appears between the Fathers and the Devas. All this work of evolution is done by the Supreme Brahma. "The making of names and forms (belongs) to Him who renders (the elements) tripartite, according to the teaching of the Śruti" (*Ved. Sūtr.* II. iv. 20). Making the elements 'tripartite' refers to *Chhândogya Up.* vi-2, where *tejas* *āpas* and *annam* (fire, water and food or earth, as usually interpreted) are alone mentioned; from such crude speculations, the Sāṅkhya elaborated its well-thought and finished analysis of the Universe. When this was done, though the Vedānta was directly opposed to the fundamental Sāṅkhya teaching and the author of the Brahma Sūtras devoted two sections of the work to refute the Sāṅkhya heresy, by appealing both to reason and revelation, it accepted the Sāṅkhya scheme of transmutation; its promulgator Kapila has become an incarnation of Viṣṇu and his philosophy a revelation as unassailable as the self-promulgated Veda.

The Vedānta has elaborated the Vedic scheme of three regions, the earth, the sky, and the intermediate region (*antarikṣha*) into three cosmic spheres, the Vedānta scheme being perhaps a rival of the Vaiṣṇava scheme. The *Māṇḍūkya*

Upanishad is the first to propound the scheme. "Brahma that is this Atma is four-footed. The first foot is *Vaiṣvânara*, seated in the waking consciousness, sensing external objects, with seven limbs * and nineteen doors *, experiencer of the gross († compounded) world. The second foot is *Taijasa*, seated in the dreaming consciousness, sensing internal objects, with seven limbs * and nineteen doors *, experiencer of the † elementary (subtle) world. Deep sleep (*sushuptam*) when the sleeper desires nothing whatsoever, dreams not at all; becoming one with the state of deep sleep a mass of (undifferentiated) consciousness, filled with bliss, the enjoyer of bliss, he is *Prājña*, the third foot. This is the Lord of all, this the omniscient, this the indweller of all, this the cause of the birth and death of all beings. Not

* The orthodox explanation of the seven limbs is that they are the Heaven, the sun, wind, *Ākāśa*, water, earth and fire conceived as *vaiṣvânara*'s head, eye, breath, heart, bladder, feet and mouth. The nineteen doors are the ten organs of sense and action, five *prāṇas* and the four parts of the internal organ *manas*, *buddhi*, *chitta* and *ahamkāram*. This can scarcely be the idea of the author of the *Upanishad*, for the division of the internal organ into four parts belongs to the age of Sankara and not earlier. Anquetil's suggestion that they are the five elements, the ten organs, three *gunas* and mind is a better guess, but not sufficiently convincing.

† cf. *Pañchikṛita* and *apañchikṛita*, *aviśeṣha* and *viśeṣha*, of the *Sāṅkhya*, v. p. 273.

sensing the internal, not sensing the external, not sensing both, no mass of sentiency, not conscious, not-unconscious, unseen, unusable, untouchable, indefinable, inconceivable, indescribable, the essence of the intuition of the one Âtmâ, where the world is not, the unchanging, the blissful, the one without second, that, which is to be known, is the Âtmâ, the fourth (foot)." (*Māṇḍ. Up.* 2-7).

Nṛsiṃha Tāpini Upanishad, II. i, is a commentary on the *Māṇḍūkya Upanishad* and presents a systematic parallelism between the three states of the individual consciousness and of the cosmic consciousness as follows :—

States	Individual	Cosmic
Waking.	Viśva.	Vaiśvānara.
Dream.	Taijasa.	Hiraṇyagarbha.
Sleep.	Prājña.	Īśvara.

The worlds and bodies corresponding to these three states of consciousness are called Sthûla Sūkshma and Kāraṇa, gross, subtle and causal (the fourth, Turiya, being the Absolute). The three worlds are also called Virâṭ, Svarâṭ and Samrâṭ.

(4) ŚAIVA AND ŚĀKTA ĀGAMAS.

The Sāṅkhya divided the objective universe into twenty-four *tattvas*,* which with the *Puruṣa* make up the twenty-five principles that constitute the macrocosm and the microcosm. The Śaivas analyse the universe into thirty-six *tattvas*. Between *Prakṛiti* and *Buddhi* they interpolate *Guṇa* as a *tattva* separate from either. Thus there are twenty-five *tattvas* below *Puruṣa*, who is the twenty-sixth. Above him there are five, called *Pancha kañchuka*, the five-fold envelope, *viz.*, *Niyati*, *Kāla*, *Rāga*, *Vidyā*, and *Kalā*. Above *Kalā*, there are *Māyā*, *Śuddha Vidyā*, *Īṣvara*, *Sadāśiva* and *Śiva tattvas*.

These thirty-six *tattvas* are divided into three classes, the highest, *Śivtattva*, being a class by itself, the next three, *Sadāśiva*, *Īṣvara* and *Suddhavidyā* being the *Vidyātattva* and the thirty-two beginning from *Māyā* and ending with the earth being the *Ātmātattva*.

The first of the *Ātmātattvas* is *Māyā*, not

* *Tattva*, lit, that-ness has various connotations. Sometimes it means reality, as opposed to phenomenality, a real, ultimate factor of the cosmos. But in the Sāṅkhya and Śaiva Śāstras it more often means a definite stage of evolution, a stage having individual characteristics of its own. The *tattva trayam* of the Vaishnavas are, again, three real, and ultimate *factors* of the cosmos and not stages of the evolution of *Prakṛiti*.

the *Śuddha Māyā* mentioned in p. 158. *Māyā* is the root of the universe. It is "eternal, one, pervading, of the form of objects, the substratum in which the potential results of actions (*Karma*) inhere, impure and common to all *Sakalas*. It is, during manifestation, the cause of the subtle and gross bodies etc. of the *Pralayākālas*, which end with *pralaya*. As the trunk, the leaf, the fruit, etc., latent in the seed grow (therefrom, so the universe) from *kalā* to *kshiti* (earth) (develope from *Māyā*)." (*Paush. Ag.* iii. 2-4). "It first evolves into the subtle *tattvas* (*Kalā* etc.), by manifesting the power of sight (*dṛikṣakti*, power of perception) in the *ātmā*; then it evolves into the gross worlds and bodies. The subtle *Kalā* etc. first bind the man (*aṇu*); then the gross." (*Ib.* iii. 61-62). *Kalā* is the first *tattva* evolved from *Māyā*. "*Kalā* overcomes in all ways the *malas* (impurities) that obstruct the manifestation of *chaitanya* and thus helps *chaitanya* to manifest. *Chaitanya* is of the form of cognition and activity and is the auxiliary of the *Ātmā*; (when) it is obstructed, *Kalā* manifests it. *Kalā* does not manifest the *Ātmā* in its entirety, but makes the *chaitanya* shine partially, as *Kalā* works in accordance with *Karma*." (*Ib.* v. 2-5). *Vidyā*, the next *tattva*, evolves from *Kalā*; without it the *Ātmā* cannot derive experience of pleasure and pain. "That instrument with which the

Ātmā who has become an actor sees the operations of Buddhī is called vidyā in the Śaiva Śāstras." (*Ib.* v. 9.) Vidyā is different from Chit-Śakti; for the latter shines only when Buddh and other material modifications are destroyed. Chit-Śakti leads to pure knowledge, whereas Vidyā causes the knowledge that is bondage. Vidyā is thus a reflection of the light of consciousness (prakāśa) as kalā is a reflection of power, independence (svachchanda). "Rāga inclines to (worldly) experience one who is attached to it; for the one without desire has no enjoyment (of pain and pleasure); nor is there satisfaction for one who is subject to enjoyment of impure (bliss)." (*Ib.* v. 22-23). Rāga is a reflection of chit śakti or ichchā-śakti. "Rāga is of two kinds, of the form of images and of the form of latent (desire); of these the former (attaches men) to objects." (*Ib.* v. 37). After Rāga comes Kāla, time, which makes manifests the aforesaid tattvas as past, present and future. "Without (the flux of) time, nothing can be born, nothing die; hence time is a cause (of objects) as the wheel is (a cause) of a pot" (*Ib.* v. 50). Time is not eternal; for eternity is being outside time (*Ib.* v. 66). Niyati is the force that attracts a man to the results of his Karma, whether he desires them or not. It also determines what bodies, organs, etc., each man is to get.

Karma by itself has no power to afflict man. Śiva's power has to intervene, in the form of Niyati (*Ib.* v. 83-88). The Purusha clothes himself with these 'five envelopes' developed from Mâyâ being set thereto by Śiva. The name Purusha applies only to the sakalas; they are enveloped by ignorance (avidyâ) which comes from Prakṛiti; the Vijñānâkalas and Pralaya kevalas are not called Purushas. (*Ib.* vi. 2-4). Prakṛiti is also the stuff of which the worlds which the Purusha is to experience are made. It is the first of the gross developments of Mâyâ, Kalâ and the other four (pañchakanchuka) being subtle ones. It is also called Avyakta (*Ib.* vi. 18). In it the guṇas are in equilibrium (*Ib.* vi. 21). From Prakṛiti evolve the Guṇas; from the Guṇas, Buddhi. The rest of this part of evolution is substantially the same as that taught in the Sāṅkhya school.

The Vidyâtattvas (to be distinguished from the tattva called Vidyâ, the thirtieth in the series) are three modifications of the highest tattva, that called Śiva. This Śivatattva is nishkala, undifferentiated, where Śuddhamâyâ, with all its activity ended, becomes absorbed (reaches laya); from it radiate the powers of consciousness and action; it is indestructible, omnipresent. Eternal, unchanging, omniscient (lit. with face in all directions). (*Paush-Ag.* i. 18-20).

Sadâśiva is the next tattva, the first of the three Vidyâtattvas. "When Śuddhamâyā, the śakti of Śiva begins her life of activity, then Śiva passes to the state of Bhoga Śiva (lit., Śiva that experiences, the first stage of differentiation); he is Sadâśiva, also called Sâdâkhyā, not really separate from Śiva. When Śuddhamâyā is actually active, Bhoga Śiva passes on to the stage of Adhikāra Śiva (lit., Śiva that superintends or rules); he is then Īśvara, not really separate from Sadâśiva (*Ib.* i. 25-26). The body of five mantras referred to in the previous chapter belongs to Sadâśiva, for the highest, undifferentiated Śivatattva, can scarcely be said to have a body, even one composed of mantras.

Bindu, otherwise Śuddha Mâyā, also Śivaśakti, the active counterpart of these three highest tattvas is not counted as a separate tattva; so that the Śākta āgamas give her prominence and throw the Śivas in the background. "The laya and other (two) different states of Śiva already described have Bindu as their substratum; she is the same as Kuṇḍalinī (the globular)." She it is that binds Ananta and the rest to the bondage of their (respective) activities and releases them therefrom. Moreover at the time of creation the world beginning with that of mantras proceed from her and

become absorbed in her." (*Ib.* ii. 1-4). "Her activity in manifesting tattvas determines the four (highest tattvas), *Śiva tattva*, *Sādākhyā tattva*, *Îṣvara tattva*, and (*Śuddha*) *Vidyā tattva*." (*Ib.* ii. 32-33). "*Śuddha Vidyā* is the cause of true knowledge" (*Ib.* ii. 40).

Besides this line of evolution of the various 'principles' of the Universe, the *Śaiva Āgamas* also describe the evolution of hosts of beings, succeeding the rise of *Māyā*. "Then at first he creates eight qualified *Kevala* souls (*aṇus*), accompanied by *Vāmā* and other *Śaktis* and surrounded by the 7 crores of *mantras*." (*Mrig. Ag.* iii. 1). They are here called *kevala* because they belong to the class already described as *Vijñāna kevala*, those that have *Āṇava m'ala* sticking on to them but are rid of *Karma* and *Māyā*. They are *Ananta*, *Sūkshma*, *Śivottama*, *Ekanetra*, *Ekarudra*, and *Śikhandî*, lords of lords (*Rājarājas*). "Then the Lord being manifested *Ananta* and the rest, creates from *Māyā tattva* (the knot), the 118 (*Îṣvaras*) whose bodies begin from *Kalā*." (*Ib.* iii. 9). These evidently, are subject to two *malas*.

"Afterwards the Lord enters into those rulers of the worlds (*bhuvaneṣvaras*) who are tainted (with the three *malas*) from whom all this

(universe has arisen) and whose work depends upon (their) *karma*." (*Ib.* iii. 10). They are *Brahma*, *Vishṇu*, *Rudra*, (the destroyer of a minor universe, to be distinguished from the great Lord), and the rest, who thus are *Sakalas*. These beings inhabit various spheres, called *Bhuvanas* into the description of which it is profitless to enter.

The line of separation between the *Śaiva* and *Śākta Āgamas* so far as mythology is concerned is generally faint; but the more rigorous *Śākta* schools, while accepting the *Śaiva* analysis of the *tattvas* substitute hierarchies of female divinities for the *Śaiva* deities. *Parā-ṣakti*, the Supreme Goddess is always surrounded by hordes of followers, like the queen of the amazons. One hierarchy is that of the 16 *Nityās* —*Mahā Tripurasundarī*, *Kāmeṣvarī*, *Bhagamālīnī*, etc; another consists of *Mantriṇī*, *Dandīnī*, *Nakulī* and other *Devīs*. Their names, functions and the Mantras which appeal to them form the chief subject matter of *Śākta* books. They are generally distinguished as *Īśvarīs* when pure *Sattva*, *Rajas* and *Tamas* excluded, forms their essence, and as *Yoginīs* when they are tainted by *Rajas* and *Tamas*. No useful purpose will be served by a more detailed study of these divine charmers.

Varivasyā rahasya expounds the secret teach-

ings with regard to the starting of the process of creation, quaint and interesting. "This is the order of creation. A man, desirous of begetting offspring, on account of the *adṛishṭa* (*karma*) of the son to be born, contemplates his own powers and himself enters, in the form of *Śukla*, the wife that is the half of his body; . . . then the wife in the form of *ṣoṇita* enters within the *śukla*; thence the *bindu* swells out, like the seed of the banyan and the *udumbara*; then in the order in which the sprout etc. generate, in process of time, children etc. are generated; when the sun's rays enter a mirror opposite the sun, the sun's rays and rays from the mirror become mixed and start as a *bindu* of light and fall on a wall. Similarly, on account of the *Adṛishṭa* (*karma*) of (all) beings, *Brahma* who is *Prakāśa*, becomes desirous of creating the world which had been absorbed in himself, turns to see his *Śakti*, enters her in the form of a *bindu* of light and becomes a *bindu* of *śukla*. Thence *Śakti*, becomes *ṣoṇita* and enters into it. The *bindu* that results from their commingling swells out. Then is produced a special substance called *Hār-dakalā* (heart-ray). That has to be learnt from the lips of a *Guru* and cannot be written in books." (*Ib. ii. 15. Com.*)

Lalitā Sahasranāma bhāshya quotes from a *Vākta* work the following elaborate description

of the stages of creation. First is (1) the *ghaṇībhūta* stage, when *karma* absorbed in *pralaya* is not ripe for manifestation and matter is a homogeneous mass. When the ripening is beginning it, is (2) *vichikīrṣha*. *Māyā* becomes charged with ripened *karma* and *Brahma* becomes endowed with *Māyā* and is ready to create; this is (3) *Avyakta* or *Kāraṇa Bindu* (the causal seed). From it starts (4) the *Kārya Bindu* (effected seed), who is *Parāvāk*, *Chit*. Thence issues (5) *Nāda*, *Sūkṣma Vāk*, *chidachit*; thence, *Bīja*, (gross) seed, *sthūla*, *Achit*. Stages 3, 4, 5, 6 form the *Avyakta* *Īṣvara*, *Hiranyagarba* and *Vaiṣvanara* of the *Vedānta* (explained in section 3), as also their *Śākta* analogues. *viz*, *Śāntā*, *Vāmā*, *Jyesthā*, and *Raudrī*, otherwise, *Ambikā*, *Ichchhā*, *Jñāna*, and *Kriyā*.

(5) VAISHNAVA ĀGAMAS.

The *Pādma Samhita* describes the cosmic beings and spheres in the following terms "There is the eternal, incomparable, Light, eternally-satisfied, spotless, the all-form, the formless, beyond *Tamas*, without destruction. On account of (creative activity) comes out from this eternal Being, *Vāsudeva*, two-handed, single-clothed, like pure crystal, with the brilliance of thousands of lacs of crores of moons, fires and suns, seated in, -

sphere of rays, with c h a k r a (discus) and other implements as his marks, with Ś r ī v a t s a (a curl of hair) and K a u s t u b h a (a jewel) on his breast, shining with a garland ornamented with a crown, a necklace, armlets, bangles, etc., wearing a yellow cloth, graceful, the first spotless King. He is known as V ā s u d e v a ; from (His) four-faced Being all created things (came). He is to be meditated on by Yogīs always in the centre of the lotus of the heart. The wise (s ū r i s) see him as the supreme goal of V i s h ṇ u . From V ā s u d e v a was born another V ā s u d e v a , single-faced, four-armed, endowed with the discus and other implements. (He keeps) the discus for the protection (of the world); the all-loving, again, has the lotus for the purpose of creation ; the (conch called) p ā ṇ c h a j a n y a for release (m u k t i), also the mace for destruction ; with the ś r ī v a t s a and k ' a u s t u b h a on his breast, ornamented with a garland; black like the peacock's neck; with a yellow cloth, born with him. This Lord V ā s u d e v a is the author of creation, protection, destruction, and release. For some cause or other he divided himself into two ; of these one was V ā s u d e v a , like a pure crystal, the second was N ā r a y a ṇ a , of the colour of a blue cloud. From V ā s u d e v a (came) S a ṁ k a r s h a ṇ a , from him (the latter) was born P r a d y u m n a . From P r a d y u m n a , was born A n i r u d d h a . All these are four-

armed. *Vāsudeva* is known to have the six *guṇas*, *jñāna* and the rest, in equal quantities; the forms (*mūrtis*) to be serially described, (come) from possessing different quantities of the *guṇas*. He who has excess of *jñāna* is named *Samkarshaṇa*; *Pradyumna* has an excess of *bala*; on the excess of *Aiśvarya*, (comes) *Aniruddha*; from the four *mūrtis* are born twenty-four *mūrtis*, as many lamps (are lighted) from one lamp". (*Pādma Sam.* ii-7-12).

The functions of these beings are described in the *Lakshmītantra*. "*Aniruddha* creates this; *Pradyumna* maintains what he creates; the *Samkarshaṇa* eats (destroys) what is thus created and maintained." (*Id.* iv. 19.) In variance with this *Lakshmī* describes the course of creation in chap v. of the same book. "I, desirous of creation, with a small drop (*bindu*) of mine, start the pure creation, of the full six *guṇas*. Before my form is altered by the formation of that *bindu*, I am called *Mahālakshmī*, surrounded by the three *guṇas*. When *Rajas* becomes predominant, I become the great *Parameśvarī*. My form filled with *Tamas* is known as *Mahā Mâyā*; and my form of *Sattva* is known as *Mahā Vidyā*. Myself and these two women by meditation created three pairs (of beings), in accordance with our nature. Know that my own mentally-produced beautif-

pair, golden-wombed, lotus-eyed, beautiful, lotus-seated, is from a part of Pradyumna. (Of this pair), the male is Brahmâ (called also) Dhâtâ, Vidhi, Viriñcha; the woman is called Śrî, Padmâ, Kamlâ, Lakshmî. From a part of Saṃkarshaṇa, was mentally produced by Mahâmâyâ, a pair, three-eyed, beautiful in all limbs; the male was Rudra, Śaṅkara, Sthāṇu, Kapardi, three-eyed, and (the woman) Trayî, Îṣvarâ, Bhâṣhâ, Vidyâ, Akṣharâ, Kâmadhenu, the (heavenly) Cow, Sarasvatî. From a part of Aniruddha was mentally produced by Mahâvidyâ, a pair; the male thereof was Keṣava, Viṣṇu, Kṛishṇa, Hṛishîkeṣa, Vâsudeva, Janârdana, the woman being Mahagaurî, Satî. Chandrâ, Subhagâ; by my command Trayî became Brahmâ's wife, Gaurî, Rudra's wife, and the (lotus-born) Lakshmî, of Vâsudeva" (*Ib* v. 2-23). Brahmâ then created the cosmic egg; it was broken in two by Rudra and Viṣṇu protects all that is within the egg.

The supreme manifests himself in three forms, called Para, Vyûha and Vibhava; of these, the Para (supreme) form is the one described at the beginning of this section. The Vyûha comprises the four forms of Vâsudeva, Saṃkarshaṇa, Pradyumna and Aniruddha,

